# UC Berkeley UC Berkeley Electronic Theses and Dissertations

## Title

Peacebuilding, Political Order, and Post-War Risks

# Permalink

https://escholarship.org/uc/item/14p455v4

Author Willcoxon, George Frederick

# Publication Date 2015

Peer reviewed|Thesis/dissertation

Peacebuilding, Political Order, and Post-War Risks

Ву

George Frederick Willcoxon

A dissertation submitted in partial satisfaction of the requirements for the degree of

Doctor of Philosophy in Political Science

in the Graduate Division of the

University of California, Berkeley

Committee-in-Charge:

Professor Steven Weber, Chair Professor Ron E. Hassner Professor Leonardo R. Arriola Professor Michael J. Watts

Summer 2015

© by George Frederick Willcoxon 2015 All Rights Reserved

#### Abstract

Peacebuilding, Political Order, and Post-War Risks

by

George Frederick Willcoxon Doctor of Philosophy in Political Science University of California, Berkeley

## Steven Weber, Chair

Since 1945, violent conflict has occurred primarily within sovereign states rather than among them. These internal conflicts have far surpassed international conflicts in lethality, economic destruction, and social upheaval. This phenomenon is diverse: no region has avoided civil wars, while the stated aims of rebel groups have ranged widely. Prominent examples include anti-colonial nationalists in Algeria, Mozambique, and Kenya; ethnic separatists in Eritrea and Bosnia; Latin America and Southeastern Asia; leftists in Islamic fundamentalists in Afghanistan, Iraq, and Syria; and income seeking warlords in Liberia and Sierra Leone. Internal conflicts have emerged in rich European countries such as the United Kingdom and Spain, and in the context of state collapse and extreme poverty in the Democratic Republic of Congo and Somalia. Some civil wars have lasted only weeks, while the longest -- in Sudan-- lasted over 40 years.

Intense violent conflicts often leave core state institutions debilitated, fragmented, or, in some cases, totally destroyed. For these societies, the central tasks for ending conflict and beginning post-war recovery involve reinvigorating

-1-

or reestablishing legitimate state authority. These post-war states must both win the acquiescence of the governed and develop the infrastructural power to implement state policy. The risks of conflict relapse are significant: since 1970, 44 of 111 post-war cases (40 percent) relapse into a full-fledged civil war, while 68 of 111 (61 percent) experience at least a lowlevel conflict. The time for policymakers to mitigate this risk is short: of post-war countries that fall back into civil war, the median time to relapse is just 35.5 months. The immediate post-war environment is therefore particularly critical for determining the political, economic, and social trajectories of conflict-affected countries. The right combination of policies can help determine whether a country recovers quickly and secures any available peace dividend, or whether it relapses and slides into a conflict trap. This dissertation explains how societies that have managed to end their civil wars are able or unable to rebuild political order in the their post-war period.

This dissertation focuses on one key policy arena-- perhaps the most critical policy arena-- for post-war societies to address: the security sector. It may sound simplistic or even tautological to claim that the organization, disposition, control, and reform of armed groups are the most important task for a post-war society to undertake. It may seem obvious to stress the importance of the size, competencies, oversight, social embeddedness, and other qualities of the military, the police, the intelligence services, and any remaining armed nonstate actors. But such qualities resist easy quantification, and most scholars and practitioners over the past decade have on economic performance, political democratization, focused communal reconciliation, post-conflict justice, and other "softpower" variables to explain patterns of post-war successes and following chapters attempt to failures. The shift the

-2-

conversation back to the formation and reformation of security sector actors in war-affected countries.

Dedication

This dissertation is dedicated to my wife Nicole, my son Theodore, my parents Michael and Anne, and my sister Katharine.

# Table of Contents

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS VI
CIVIL WARS AND MODERN STATES 1
PEACEBUILDING SINCE 1970: A QUALITATIVE COMPARATIVE ANALYSIS 6
THE THEORY AND PRACTICE OF PEACEBUILDING
International Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Approaches 10
Democratic Approaches to Peacebuilding
Power Sharing Approaches16
Security-Related Approaches to Peacebuilding
Disarmament, Demobilization, and Reintegration
Economic Recovery, Liberalization, and Privatization 23
Reconciliation and Post-Conflict Justice
Rule of Law
Public Order
Police, Judicial, and Penal Reforms27
Transparency, Bureaucracy, and Anti-Corruption
Patronage-Based, Illiberal, and Authoritarian Approaches to
Peacebuilding
Patronage and Civil War Recovery28
Illiberal Peacebuilding
Coercive Approaches to Establishing Order after Civil War Ends
Other Approaches
Qualitative Comparative Analysis
Data
Policy Combinations
Peacekeeping Forces and Early Elections
Local Politics and Patronage Strategy
Domination Strategy55
Durable Stalemates and Suppressing Political Opposition 56
Other Findings
Conclusion

ECONOMIC INFLUENCES       68         REGIME FEATURES AND INSTITUTIONAL ARCHITECTURES       69         POLITICAL TERROR       70         MILITARY INFLUENCES       71         POWER SHARING AND DECENTRALIZATION       72         ELECTIONS       73         OTHER FINDINGS       73         OTHER FINDINGS       73         CONCLUSION       74         POST-WAR LIBYA: STALEMATES AND PEACEBUILDING AS SOURCES OF         POLITICAL ORDER AND DISORDER       75         PEACE AS STRATEGIC STALEMATE       82         POWER AND PATRIMONIALISM IN QADDAFI'S LIBYA       87         Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization       88         Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions       90         The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of       92         Abu Salim Prison Massacre       93         Late Attempts at Legal Reforms       94         Impact on Post-War Libya       94         THE CIVIL WAR       96         Regime Fragmentation       96         From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement       100         Enter NATO and the Libya Contact Group       103
PolITICAL TERROR70MILITARY INFLUENCES71POWER SHARING AND DECENTRALIZATION72ELECTIONS73OTHER FINDINGS73CONCLUSION74POST-WAR LIBYA: STALEMATES AND PEACEBUILDING AS SOURCES OFPOLITICAL ORDER AND DISORDER75PEACE AS STRATEGIC STALEMATE82Power AND PATRIMONIALISM IN QADDAFI'S LIBYA87Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization88Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions90The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of91Oppression92Abu Salim Prison Massacre93Late Attempts at Legal Reforms94The CIVIL WAR96Regime Fragmentation96From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement100
MILITARY INFLUENCES       71         POWER SHARING AND DECENTRALIZATION       72         ELECTIONS       73         OTHER FINDINGS       73         CONCLUSION       74         POST-WAR LIBYA: STALEMATES AND PEACEBUILDING AS SOURCES OF         POLITICAL ORDER AND DISORDER       75         PEACE AS STRATEGIC STALEMATE       82         Power AND PATRIMONIALISM IN QADDAFI'S LIBYA       87         Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization       88         Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions       90         The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of       92         Abu Salim Prison Massacre       93         Late Attempts at Legal Reforms       94         The Civil WAR       96         Regime Fragmentation       96         From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement       100
POWER SHARING AND DECENTRALIZATION       72         ELECTIONS       73         OTHER FINDINGS       73         CONCLUSION       74         POST-WAR LIBYA: STALEMATES AND PEACEBUILDING AS SOURCES OF         POLITICAL ORDER AND DISORDER       75         PEACE AS STRATEGIC STALEMATE       82         POWER AND PATRIMONIALISM IN QADDAFI'S LIBYA       87         Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization       88         Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions       90         The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of       92         Abu Salim Prison Massacre       93         Late Attempts at Legal Reforms       94         Impact on Post-War Libya       94         The Civil War       96         Regime Fragmentation       96         From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement       100
ELECTIONS       73         OTHER FINDINGS       73         CONCLUSION       74         POST-WAR LIBYA: STALEMATES AND PEACEBUILDING AS SOURCES OF         POLITICAL ORDER AND DISORDER       75         PEACE AS STRATEGIC STALEMATE       82         POWER AND PATRIMONIALISM IN QADDAFI'S LIBYA       87         Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization       88         Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions       90         The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of       92         Abu Salim Prison Massacre       93         Late Attempts at Legal Reforms       94         THE CIVIL WAR       96         Regime Fragmentation       96         From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement       100
OTHER FINDINGS       73         CONCLUSION       74         POST-WAR LIBYA: STALEMATES AND PEACEBUILDING AS SOURCES OF         POLITICAL ORDER AND DISORDER       75         PEACE AS STRATEGIC STALEMATE       82         POWER AND PATRIMONIALISM IN QADDAFI'S LIBYA       87         Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization       88         Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions       90         The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of       92         Abu Salim Prison Massacre       93         Late Attempts at Legal Reforms       94         Impact on Post-War Libya       94         THE CIVIL WAR       96         Regime Fragmentation       96         From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement       100
CONCLUSION
POST-WAR LIBYA: STALEMATES AND PEACEBUILDING AS SOURCES OF         POLITICAL ORDER AND DISORDER
POLITICAL ORDER AND DISORDER.75PEACE AS STRATEGIC STALEMATE82POWER AND PATRIMONIALISM IN QADDAFI'S LIBYA87Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization88Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions90The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of92Abu Salim Prison Massacre93Late Attempts at Legal Reforms94The CIVIL WAR96Regime Fragmentation96From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement100
PEACE AS STRATEGIC STALEMATE82POWER AND PATRIMONIALISM IN QADDAFI'S LIBYA87Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization88Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions90The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of92Abu Salim Prison Massacre93Late Attempts at Legal Reforms94The CIVIL WAR96Regime Fragmentation96From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement100
Power AND PATRIMONIALISM IN QADDAFI'S LIBYA87Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization88Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions90The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of92Oppression92Abu Salim Prison Massacre93Late Attempts at Legal Reforms94Impact on Post-War Libya94The CIVIL WAR96Regime Fragmentation96From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement100
Security Sector Fragmentation and Politicization
Force Structure and Arms Acquisitions
The Security and Justice Sectors as an Instrument of Oppression
Oppression
Abu Salim Prison Massacre
Late Attempts at Legal Reforms
Impact on Post-War Libya94THE CIVIL WAR96Regime Fragmentation96From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement100
THE CIVIL WAR
Regime Fragmentation
From Popular Uprising to Rebel Movement
Enter NATO and the Libya Contact Group
Battlefield Stalemate and Post-War Planning
NATO Tips the Balance Toward the Rebels
Rebels Contest Control of Tripoli
Qaddafi Killed and the NTC Enters Tripoli
Policy Configurations in Post-War Libya 114
Political and Institutional Origins of the Stalemate 116
Local Elections and Local Political Monopolies

	Military Origins of the Stalemate	122
	Local Military and Civilian Councils	123
	The Supreme Security Committees and The Libya Shield Forces	
	Contracting with New Militias	
	The Federalist Gambit	
	Khalifa Hifter and Operation Dignity	
	2014 Parliamentary Elections	
	Libya Dawn	
	New Stalemates	
]	DISCUSSION	137
	The Political Independence of Factions	140
	A Weak Formal Security Sector	
	Secure Government Revenues	
	Legal Impunity and No Post-Conflict Justice	150
	Pillars of Stalemates are the Flashpoints of Violence	151
г	THE WAY FORWARD	153
ਸਹ	ACTBUTTOTING AND VIOLENT CRIME IN DOST-WAR KOSOVO	157
	EACEBUILDING AND VIOLENT CRIME IN POST-WAR KOSOVO	
]	Peacebuilding in Post-War Kosovo	162
]	Peacebuilding in Post-War Kosovo	162 168
]	Peacebuilding in Post-War Kosovo Crime and Punishment in Post-War Kosovo Theoretical and Empirical Literature on Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding	162 168 173
]	Peacebuilding in Post-War Kosovo Crime and Punishment in Post-War Kosovo Theoretical and Empirical Literature on Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding	162 168 173 173
]	PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO CRIME AND PUNISHMENT IN POST-WAR KOSOVO THEORETICAL AND EMPIRICAL LITERATURE ON PEACEKEEPING AND PEACEBUILDING Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Causal Mechanisms of Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding	162 168 173 173 174
] (	PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO CRIME AND PUNISHMENT IN POST-WAR KOSOVO THEORETICAL AND EMPIRICAL LITERATURE ON PEACEKEEPING AND PEACEBUILDING Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Causal Mechanisms of Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Sources of Crime and Social Violence	162 168 173 173 174 177
] (	PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO CRIME AND PUNISHMENT IN POST-WAR KOSOVO THEORETICAL AND EMPIRICAL LITERATURE ON PEACEKEEPING AND PEACEBUILDING Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Causal Mechanisms of Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Sources of Crime and Social Violence Data Sources AND EMPIRICAL STRATEGY	162 168 173 173 174 177 179
] (	PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO CRIME AND PUNISHMENT IN POST-WAR KOSOVO THEORETICAL AND EMPIRICAL LITERATURE ON PEACEKEEPING AND PEACEBUILDING Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Causal Mechanisms of Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Sources of Crime and Social Violence Data Sources AND EMPIRICAL STRATEGY Measuring Crime	162 168 173 173 174 177 179 179
] (	PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO	162 168 173 173 174 177 179 179
] (	PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO	162 168 173 173 174 177 179 179 187
] (	PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO	162 168 173 173 174 177 179 179 187
] (	PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO CRIME AND PUNISHMENT IN POST-WAR KOSOVO THEORETICAL AND EMPIRICAL LITERATURE ON PEACEKEEPING AND PEACEBUILDING Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Causal Mechanisms of Peacekeeping and Peacebuilding Sources of Crime and Social Violence Data Sources AND EMPIRICAL STRATEGY Measuring Crime Measuring Police Presence Measuring Economic, Geographic, and Social Correlates of Crime Time-SeriesCross-Section Regressions with Crime Data	162 168 173 173 174 177 179 179 187 187 189
	PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO	162 168 173 173 174 177 179 179 187 189 190 191

Results		
The Determinants of Violent Crime in Post-War Kosovo		
Police Presence is a Significant Predictor of Crime Rates. 199		
Poverty Does Not Predict Murder, Arson; Does Predict		
Aggravated Assault, IEDs		
Geography Does Not Predict Crime Rates		
Social Heterogeneity does not Predict Crime Rates 202		
Conclusion 204		
CONCLUSION		
Better Quantification of Security Variables		
Developing Case Studies on Security Reforms in Conflict-Afflicted Countries		
Research on conflict in the Middle East, North and East Africa, and the Sahel		
APPENDIX A 208		
APPENDIX B		
APPENDIX C		
BIBLIOGRAPHY 219		

# ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

Many thanks are due to the many people who helped shape my intellectual growth and this dissertation in particular. First I would like to thank my dissertation committee for their service, support, and detailed comments on this monograph: Steven Weber, Ron Hassner, Leonardo Arriola, and Michael Watts. I would also like to thank mentors and colleagues for their comments on individual pieces of this dissertation: Giacomo Chiozza, Christopher Chivvis, Theocharis Grigoriadis, Robert MacCoun, Nicole Willcoxon, and the participants of research seminars at RAND Corporation, the United Nations Economic and Social Commission for Western Asia, and the Political Science Graduate Student Conference. I have had tremendous support from family and friends over the years, without which this project would not have reached the finish line. All errors, semicolons, and Oxford commas are my own.

Since 1945, violent conflict has occurred primarily within states rather than among them. These sovereign internal conflicts far surpassed international conflicts have in lethality, economic destruction, and social upheaval. This phenomenon is diverse: no region has avoided civil wars, while the stated aims of rebel groups have ranged widely. Prominent examples include anti-colonial nationalists in Algeria, Mozambique, and Kenya; ethnic separatists in Eritrea and Bosnia; leftists in Latin America and Southeastern Asia; Islamic fundamentalists in Afghanistan, Iraq, and Syria; and income seeking warlords in Liberia and Sierra Leone. Internal conflicts have emerged in rich European countries such as the United Kingdom and Spain, and in the context of state collapse and extreme poverty in the Democratic Republic of Congo and Somalia. Some civil wars have lasted only weeks, while the longest -- in Sudan-- lasted over 40 years.

Intense violent conflicts often leave core state institutions debilitated, fragmented, or, in some cases, totally destroyed. For these societies, the central tasks for ending conflict and beginning post-war recovery involve reinvigorating or reestablishing legitimate state authority. These post-war states must both win the acquiescence of the governed and develop the infrastructural power to implement state policy. The risks of conflict relapse are significant: since 1970, 44 of 111 post-war cases (40 percent) relapse into a full-fledged civil war, while 68 of 111 (61 percent) experience at least a low-

-1-

level conflict.<sup>1</sup> The time for policymakers to mitigate this risk is short: of post-war countries that fall back into civil war, the median time to relapse is just 35.5 months. The immediate post-war environment is therefore particularly critical for determining the political, economic, and social trajectories of conflict-affected countries. The right combination of policies can help determine whether a country recovers quickly and secures any available peace dividend, or whether it relapses and slides into a conflict trap. This dissertation explains how societies that have managed to end their civil wars are able or unable to rebuild political order.

The following chapters and appendices focus on one key policy arena-- perhaps the most critical policy arena-- for post-war societies to address: the security sector. It may sound simplistic or even tautological to claim that the organization, disposition, control, and reform of armed groups are the most important task for a post-war society to undertake. It may seem obvious to stress the importance of the size, competencies, oversight, social embeddedness, and other qualities of the police, the intelligence services, and military, the any remaining armed non-state actors. But such qualities resist easy quantification, and most scholars and practitioners over the past decade have focused on economic performance, political democratization, communal reconciliation, post-conflict justice, and other "soft-power" variables to explain patterns of post-war successes and failures. The following chapters attempt to shift the conversation back to the formation and reformation of security sector actors in war-affected countries.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> The definition of war and conflict used in these chapters follows the UCDP-PRIO project definition. A conflict is "a contested incompatibility that concerns government and/or territory where the use of armed force between two parties, of which at least one is the government of a state, results in at least 25 battle-related deaths." A war exceeds 1,000 battle deaths. (UCDP-PRIO Codebook v. 4-2013).

chapters deliberately take three quite different The approaches to study peacebuilding, political methodological order, and post-war risks. The following chapter conducts a large, cross-national comparative analysis of all post-war periods since 1970 to determine what policy arrangements sort post-war cases into successes and failures. The analysis finds that there are four major, successful peacebuilding strategies since 1970, and finds that these strategies share a focus on the institutional and military configurations of the post-war society. The institutional and military policies that favor peacebuilding success include the presence (or absence) of arrangements, political decentralization, power-sharing sufficient numbers of security forces, demobilization and integration programs, and peacekeeping troops. The findings suggest that peacebuilders should focus on the institutional and military architecture of post-war countries, rather than on their economic development, democratization, or communal reconciliation, at least if they are narrowly focused on preventing war relapse.

The third chapter tests these results by analyzing postconflict risks more broadly, using conventional regression approaches on virtually the same cross-national data. The findings are roughly congruent with Chapter 2: regime features, military size, and decentralization are evidently correlated with peace duration, while political terror as a governing strategy virtually guarantees civil war relapse. Post-war economic growth is highly correlated with longer spells of peace. Post-war justice, ethnic fractionalization, the size of a country, DDR, military integration, and national elections are not correlated with longer durations of peace after civil wars end.

-3-

The fourth chapter provides an "analytic narrative" to a prominent, recent post-war case: Libya after Qaddafi. From 2011 to 2014, Libya managed to implement much of the "peacebuilding handbook" promoted by western governments and international organizations. The rough stability that existed from 2011 to 2014 -- the "peace" -- was not, however, due to those policies but to an underlying political and military stalemate. The stalemate was based on four pillars: the territorial independence of the factions, secure government finances in the form of oil revenues, a weak national army, and the lack of any attempt to impose post-conflict justice on the factions. These factors meant that no political faction (including the government) had the capacity to destroy its rivals; but neither did any faction view the stalemate as intolerable. The chapter argues that the four pillars were each necessary conditions for the stalemate to endure: remove any of them and the stalemate would collapse. In the event, two pillars crumbled during late 2013 and early 2014, and Libyan society returned to open warfare by mid-2014. The chapter provides a detailed narrative for these processes.

The fifth chapter looks at how a post-war security sector organization-- the Kosovo Police Service-- was created from scratch, and evaluates its institutional performance using conventional regression analysis of police deployment data and crime rates, among other variables. The findings are hopeful: the new Kosovo Police Service was successful at controlling violent crime. The analysis finds that Kosovo Police Service (KPS) deployments had a significant and large downward effect on murder rates and IED attack rates in a given region of Kosovo. This effect translated to between three and nine fewer murders in a region annually, for each additional KPS officer per 1,000 residents. At the same time, violent crime rates in post-war Kosovo were not determined by the factors typically identified

-4-

as critical to avoiding conflict recurrence. Poverty, rough terrain, and ethnic heterogeneity are not good predictors of violent crime in post-war Kosovo. The findings suggest that the data generating process for post-war crime and conflict recurrence are distinct.

Altogether, these chapters, I believe, provide wide-ranging and innovative research on the issues of peacebuilding, security sector formation and reformation, institutional effectiveness, and post-conflict risks.

# PEACEBUILDING SINCE 1970: A QUALITATIVE COMPARATIVE ANALYSIS

Responding to civil wars and rebuilding states that have experienced them are a major challenge of our era. The ways in which local and international actors attempt to build peaceful societies after civil war are quite varied. In some cases, such as Kosovo and East Timor, international actors have acted as trustees and implemented a peacebuilding strategy directly on the war-torn society. In other circumstances, the international community provided narrowly-tailored if crucial assistance on one or more key policy dimensions, such as security, elections administration, or humanitarian aid. Another set of cases has had limited to no international involvement: "peacebuilding" efforts were an entirely local affair and in such cases as Myanmar and Chechnya operated well outside international norms and best practices. Ongoing instability in the Middle East, Africa, and South Asia suggests that both local and international peacebuilding efforts will remain a challenge for years to come.

Despite the best efforts of theorists and practitioners to learn lessons from experiences in the Balkans, Afghanistan, Iraq, and elsewhere, we still know little about how to (re)establish political order after conflict. It remains a vexing policy process with few rules of thumb. In particular, there is no consensus on the priority or relative effectiveness of the major policy alternatives. How early should elections be held? Under what conditions should third parties deploy unarmed monitors, armed peacekeepers, or no forces at all? Are farreaching economic reforms constructive or disruptive to post-war stability? Should peacebuilders exploit or subvert established

-6-

patronage networks? Are some forms of power-sharing agreements more effective than others? The historical record reveals not only a wide range of decisions on many such individual policies quite diverse combinations of policies-- some but also reflecting intentional, coherent, combinations integrated peacebuilding strategies, other combinations reflecting historical contingencies or ad hoc decision-making processes.

Using a methodological approach novel to the civil war and peacekeeping literatures, but common to research on European political economies, this chapter systematically evaluates and compares the effectiveness of the major policy configurations undertaken after <u>every</u> civil war episode since 1970. Using Charles Ragin's Qualitative Comparative Analysis on data extracted from the quantitative civil war and peacekeeping literatures, this analysis improves our understanding of peacebuilding strategies, the complexities and complementarities of these strategies, and their relationship to patterns of war recurrence.

The analysis finds that there are four successful peacebuilding strategies since 1970, and their critical features are institutional and military in nature. The institutional and military policies leading to success include the presence (or of power-sharing absence) arrangements, political decentralization, sufficient numbers of security forces, demobilization and integration programs, and peacekeeping These institutional and military factors determine troops. success rather than a host of other common policy prescriptions: economic development, democratization, and reconciliation among them. The findings suggest that peacebuilders should focus on the institutional and military architecture of post-war countries, rather than on their economic development, democratization, or reconciliation efforts.

-7-

The four paths to political order can be characterized as follows. A Local Politics and Patronage Strategy (50 percent of success cases) involves early elections, a decentralized political system, and the prospect of acquiring government employment or other financial resources for former combatants. A Durable Stalemate Strategy (38 percent of success cases) necessitates the territorial independence of factions, secure and independent government revenues, and clear signals that the government cannot or will not militarily pursue the rebels. In this configuration, both the government and rebels accept a stalemate as less costly and risky than continued fighting. A Peacekeeping Strategy (21 percent of success cases) requires large numbers of peacekeeping troops in conjunction with elections within 30 months. A Domination Strategy (16 percent of success cases) requires large numbers of local security forces, political centralization, the absence of peacekeepers, and the rejection of post-war justice mechanisms.<sup>2</sup> The Domination Strategy suggests that strong, credible authoritarians are able to negotiate enduring ceasefires with rebel groups.

analysis undermines central pillars The of the "peacebuilding consensus" that has emerged since the end of the Cold War. First, the presence of peacekeeping troops is a necessary condition in only one successful post-war policy configuration: when peacekeeping troops are combined with early elections. In four-fifths of successful cases, the presence of any peacekeeping troops was redundant or, indeed, would have destabilized the country by preventing local authorities from pursuing alternative, effective strategies. This finding suggests that the international community can conserve resources by deploying peacekeeping troops only in circumstances where

 $<sup>^{2}</sup>$  Percents do not add to 100 because cases can be covered by more than one policy configuration.

early elections are feasible and advisable, and pursuing other peacebuilding strategies when early elections are not.

Second, the presence of democracy does not help determine failure of peacebuilding efforts. success or In fact, authoritarian governance better explains successes, though for majority of cases the level of democracy is the simply irrelevant. While democracy might be desirable for normative for improving governance outcomes in reasons or post-war countries, its presence appears not to sort cases into "success" or "failure" categories, at least as defined as avoiding a recurrence of war within five years. This finding contradicts influential conventional wisdom about post-war democratization that underpins much international security policy formulation.

Third, I find little evidence that economic liberalization or economic growth explain the successful consolidation of peace, at least at any policy-relevant level. I do find that high income and upper-middle income countries are a perfect subset of countries that do not experience civil war recurrence: no wealthy post-war country has relapsed into civil war since 1970. However, it is not clear how the vest majority of post-war countries, which are generally quite poor, can leap from low to high economic-development levels in a short 5- to 10-year policy window.

-9-

#### THE THEORY AND PRACTICE OF PEACEBUILDING

Academic treatments of peacekeeping and peacebuilding, taken together with the practitioner literature and historical suggest a large policy menu for both local record, and international peacebuilders after civil wars end. These policies constitutional reforms, democratic range from elections, political-institution building, and economic liberalization; to post-conflict justice and reconciliation, security sector reform, and programs to demobilize, disarm, and reintegrate fighters into society; to mass arrests, mass killing, and other repressive post-war policies violent and observed in authoritarian countries. My own review identified over 100 distinct, major policy alternatives, listed in Appendix A with a representative citation. This section introduces the major approaches to peacebuilding after civil war and identifies the major policy alternatives within each approach, providing descriptive statistics on their prevalence.

#### INTERNATIONAL PEACEKEEPING AND PEACEBUILDING APPROACHES

prominent-- and perennially controversial--The most approach to establishing peace in societies riven by civil war is the deployment of international armed forces to the affected sometimes in concert with а large civilian country, administrative component. Third-party deployments have been a significant feature of civil wars since 1945, but especially so since 1989, including some of the most intense, intractable, and longest-lasting episodes: Afghanistan, Angola, Bosnia, Cambodia, the Democratic Republic of Congo, Iraq, Liberia, Mozambique, Somalia, and Sudan among them. By one count, there were 37 peacekeeping interventions related to internal violent conflict

from 1945 to 1989; since 1989, third parties have conducted 165 peacekeeping interventions during or after civil conflict (Mullenbach 2013).

These interventions have evolved in intensity and scope since the first UN peacekeeping deployment in 1948. The first generation of interventions typically monitored ceasefire agreements, separated combatants, patrolled buffer zones, and perhaps assisted in demobilizing the parties and providing security while the initial treaty terms were implemented (Paris 2004). These limited missions were essentially the only kind deployed prior to the thaw in superpower competition at the end of the Cold War, and were generally brief operations with narrow, "military-technical" portfolios, based on the consent of combatants under Article VI of the United Nations Charter.

Traditional peacekeeping operations after civil wars, both during and after the Cold War, have had mixed success. Doyle and Sambanis (2000, 2006) find that roughly half of all firstgeneration peacekeeping missions failed to prevent a recurrence of war. They also find that countries with first-generation peacekeeping missions still performed better than post-war countries without any intervention, ceteris paribus. Theorists peacekeeping have offered various mechanisms of for the effectiveness of even these limited, first-generation operations. They argue that traditional peacekeeping missions can mitigate coordination problems, in cases where the parties seek peace but lack the capacity to implement it safely. For example, peacekeepers can assist with communication among military forces maneuvering away from the front lines, or can assist with demobilization and the collection of weapons (Doyle and Sambanis 2006:53-54). More-assertive peacekeepers can punish aggressors (those who renege on the peace terms, or take advantage of the changing tactical environment) and thereby

-11-

raise the costs of aggression. Even observer missions have access to political and financial resources they can use to reward compliance. Peacekeepers can reduce perceptions of vulnerability by providing credible information to factions on their opponents' preferences, strengths, and compliance; peacekeepers can also reduce perceptions of vulnerability by physically separating warring parties, which has the salutary effect of reducing the chances of misperceptions or accidents escalating into conflict (Fortna 2008:86-98).

The end of the Cold War marked a sharp departure in international peacekeeping practice. In the present era, international interventions have evolved into "complex peacebuilding" operations that also "attempt, after a peace has been negotiated or imposed, to address the sources of current hostility and build local capacities for conflict resolution" (Doyle and Sambanis 2000). Complex peacebuilding operations are now quite common. Roughly 25 percent of all post-civil war periods since 1989 witnessed a complex peacebuilding mission; another 25 percent witnessed an assistance, monitoring, or traditional peacekeeping mission. The UN, ECOWAS, NATO, the African Union, the European Union, and Russia, France, Britain, Australia, and the United States have each implemented complex peacebuilding operations in a variety of contexts.

In practice, most peacebuilding operations have been even more intrusive and revolutionary than envisioned by early proponents. Paris (2004) gives the "typical formula" of peacebuilding strategies that emerged in the 1990s:

Promoting civil and political rights, such as the right to free speech and a free press, as well as freedom of association and movement; preparing and administering democratic elections; drafting national constitutions that codified civil and political rights; training or retraining police and justice officials in the appropriate behavior for

-12-

state functionaries in a liberal democracy; promoting the development of independent 'civil society' organizations and the transformation of formerly warring groups into democratic political parties; encouraging the development of free-market economies by eliminating barriers to the free flow of capital and goods within and across a country's borders; and stimulating the growth of private enterprise while reducing the state's role in the economy (Paris 2004:19).

During the peacebuilding missions of the 1990s, the emphasis was on speed: "shock therapy" or "revolutionary transformations" for post-war societies.

Post-war Kosovo and East Timor are the clearest examples of this "international peacebuilding consensus." In both cases, the United Nations directly the territories governed as protectorates: with international troops and police enforcing their writ, the UN deployed agents to administer or supervise the administration of hospitals and schools, courts and prisons, and police, fire, and rescue services. Over several years, these missions established multi-party parliaments, supervised the local media for incitement, and auctioned off state-owned enterprises. The basic infrastructure of the state was built at all levels, and as local authorities reached certain benchmarks for capacity and behavior, the UN transferred responsibility to them.

The logic behind the international peacebuilding formulademocratization plus liberalization leads to a durable peace-is the belief that democratic regimes with market economies are more peaceful at home and less likely to wage war abroad, at least against other democracies. Political theorists as far back as Kant have linked democracy and peace: democracies have internal mechanisms for the peaceful resolution of political disputes, they ensure universal participation in representative self-government, they codify alternation in the control of the state, and they foster norms of negotiation, compromise,

-13-

tolerance, and a live-and-let-live perspective. Empirical work on the Democratic Peace Theory has shown that democracies virtually never fight one another (Doyle 1983, Oneal and Russett 1999, Russett 1993). Others note that societies with market economies outperform other societies across a range of indicators of social well being and human development, and that growth-promoting reforms reduce the risk of civil war and other forms of political violence (Collier and Hoeffler 2004, de Soysa and Fjelde 2010).

These perspectives inform international peacebuilding strategies devised at the United Nations, in Washington, DC, and in European capitals, but their assumptions have also earned criticism for conflating established market-based democracies with the destabilizing, complex, and often bloody processes of marketization, development, and democratization (Hegre, et al. 2001, Paris 2004:44-46). In addition, Mansfield and Snyder (2003)find cross-national statistical evidence that transitional political regimes (anocracies) are more bellicose. Nonetheless, this "international peacebuilding consensus" is so strong that the "typical formula" is encouraged even in post-war countries relying solely on local peacebuilding capacities, in societies with little or no experience with democracy or market capitalism, or even where residual violence persists.

#### DEMOCRATIC APPROACHES TO PEACEBUILDING

With or without the presence of international forces, democratization remains one of the most prominent and common approaches to peacebuilding after civil wars. In these approaches, societies take formal steps toward open, competitive, representative government, such as reforming the constitution, extending the franchise, strengthening and

-14-

training of the legislature, drafting political party and elections law, and holding free and fair elections. These strategies have been implemented (in the absence of peacekeeping troops) in Peru, Nepal, Libya, Aceh, and the Philippines, among others. In addition to the mechanisms discussed above, advocates claim that democratic systems can transform fighters into politicians by opening peaceful channels for personal advancement and for the realization of their political goals.

The optimal timing and sequence of post-war elections is an ongoing area of research. Diamond (2005) warned that early or poorly planned elections may only "enhance the power of actors who mobilize coercion, fear, and prejudice, thereby reviving autocracy and even precipitating large-scale violent strife." He advocates instead for delaying national elections for as long as politically feasible while "militias [are] demobilized, new moderate parties trained and assisted, electoral infrastructure created, and democratic media and ideas generated" (Diamond 2005: 18-19). In his view, holding elections later under better circumstances improves chances for moderate politics and the consolidation of democracy.

Countries often hold nationwide local elections as a "dryrun" for elections for national office. Local elections can help by "providing an opportunity for new local leaders to emerge and gain experience and for political parties to build a support base," and has the potential of generating a "broader, more diverse, and more legitimate array of [local] interlocutors" with whom the central authorities can work (Dobbins et al. 2003:154, Diamond 2005:20). Using cross-national regression analyses, Brancati and Snyder (2010) find some empirical evidence that holding early elections increases the likelihood of new fighting but that "favorable conditions, including decisive victories, demobilization, peacekeeping, power sharing,

-15-

and strong political, administrative and judicial institutions, can mitigate this risk." Adapting their data to my list of cases since 1970, I find 79 percent of civil war episodes involved a nationwide election of any type during the final year of fighting, or within 5 years of the end of hostilities; 52 percent held local elections during this time frame. Early elections are also common: 69 percent of post-war episodes witnessed nationwide elections of any type in the last year of fighting or within 30 months; 39 percent held nationwide elections for local offices in the same time frame.

## Power Sharing Approaches

There is considerable debate in the scholarly literature whether or to what extent various forms of power-sharing institutions produce a more durable peace. Post-war powersharing institutions are argued to mitigate the risks of renewed fighting through the "participation of representatives of all significant communal groups in political decision making, especially at the executive level" (Lijphart 2004:97). If the recent conflict involved fighting across deep social cleavages of ethnicity, religion, or tribe, power sharing may include some degree of cultural or territorial autonomy for communal groups "to run their own internal affairs especially in the areas of education and culture" (Lijphart 2004:97). Advocates argue that power-sharing provisions can force cooperative politics on former combatants, for example, by carefully distributing decision-making power across multiple actors, or by checkingand-balancing political power.

Research on civil war termination and peace agreements identifies four main types of power-sharing institutions: political, territorial, economic, and military. **Political power** 

-16-

sharing refers to political institutions that embody consociational politics: proportional representation; the formation "grand coalitions" across the major social groups; social integration of the bureaucracy, judiciary, and military; and internal autonomy for social groups, especially in the realm of family law, education, language, and culture. The bargain must also include a mutual veto over major changes to these institutions. If communal groups are geographically concentrated, power sharing may take the shape of territorial autonomy, nationwide political decentralization, or nationwide federalism, which scholars term territorial power sharing. Economic power sharing involves the explicit (re)distribution of economic resources such as oil revenues, development spending, or land tenure. Military power sharing, also known as military integration, is discussed separately below.

In practice, power sharing institutions can be implemented in at least two formal ways and one informal: through a negotiated peace settlement whose terms include power-sharing provisions, through a post-war constitutional or statutory process enacting power-sharing provisions, or (informally) through the appointment of ministers and other high officers who represent the communal groups and who hold real, not just symbolic, power.

An example of post-war power sharing is Sudan from 2005 to 2011. The government and rebel movement, the Sudanese People's Liberation Movement and Army (SPLM/SPLA), concluded hostilities with an exhaustive, 258-page Comprehensive Peace Agreement signed in January 2005 (Comprehensive Peace Agreement 2005). The agreement detailed the institutional forms of governance in post-war Sudan: religious and cultural autonomy for the mostly-Christian southerners, the official recognition of the autonomous regional government in South Sudan, equitable

-17-

representation for southerners in a national unity government and in the legislature, the creation of a First Vice Presidency to be held by the leader of the SPLM and which exercised vetoes over some acts of the president, and the integration of the bureaucracy and the judiciary across regional and ethnic lines (CPA Chapter II). The agreement also detailed oil and other revenue sharing (CPA Chapter III). The terms of this treaty more-or-less successfully governed Sudan until South Sudan voted to secede in 2011, also following provisions in the peace treaty. Note however, that post-war governments can implement power sharing without a formal peace treaty, either forming national unity governments or adopting consociational political institutions.

Power-sharing institutions are quite prevalent in post-war societies (based on data from Walter (1999), Hartzell and Hoddie (2003), Mattes and Savun (2009, 2010), Brancati and Snyder (2010), and Harbom et al. (2006)). Such institutions include a decentralized political system (57 percent of post-war episodes), proportional representation (33 percent), bicameralism (35 percent), a formal power sharing agreement (34 percent), reserved seats for women (28 percent) and minorities (21 percent), and federalism (20 percent).

## SECURITY-RELATED APPROACHES TO PEACEBUILDING

Another set of peacebuilding policies advocated by the international community focus on the disposition, composition, integration, training, and oversight of the formal and informal security sector, including the armed forces, police, intelligence agencies, rebel forces, pro-government militias, and private security firms. Practitioners offer three distinct post-war strategies related to the security sector: (1)

-18-

disarmament, demobilization, and reintegration (DDR); (2) security sector reform (SSR); and (3) military power sharing. These strategies are often conflated in the policy literature because they are frequently implemented together.

## Disarmament, Demobilization, and Reintegration

DDR programs attempt to dissolve non-state armed groups and absorb their members back into society. As the name suggests, the modalities of an ideal-type DDR program are threefold. First, DDR attempts to secure and store weapons and other war often involving weapon destruction ceremonies, matériel, registration drives, or buy-back programs. Second, DDR attempts to break up military units and break down command-and-control of groups except the official all armed security services. Demobilization can involve the cantonment of military units in camps or on bases, formal demobilization ceremonies, the registration of individual fighters for veterans' benefits, and the geographic dispersal of fighters across the country. Third, DDR attempts to transform soldiers back into civilians by offering financial or programmatic assistance to create a small business, start a farm, receive an education, access physical or mental health services, reconcile with their communities, and so forth. In order to ease the reintegration process, DDR programs attempt to sensitize communities to the mav needs and perspectives of defeated rebels and veterans in general.

DDR programs may also involve the recruitment of some fighters into the army, police, and other post-war security services, but this is not a definitional component or even the primary thrust of DDR programs as practiced by the international community. Since 1970, international and local peacebuilders have implemented some type of DDR in 42 percent of post-war episodes, in such diverse places as El Salvador, Ethiopia,

-19-

Kosovo, Liberia, and Nepal. However, the resourcing, scope, and implementation of DDR programs vary widely and few rigorous program evaluations exist. Exactly whether, how, or why DDR works remains unclear (Schulhofer-Wohl and Sambanis 2010, cf. Humphreys and Weinstein 2007).

## Security Sector Reform

The second security-related peacebuilding approach is the thorough reform of the country's official security organizations and infrastructure. SSR is a catchall term for a vast number of policies thought to improve security practices and outcomes in developing and democratizing states. The United Nations describes security sector reform as:

A process of assessment, review and implementation as well as monitoring and evaluation led by national authorities that has as its goal the enhancement of effective and accountable security for the State and its people without discrimination and with full respect for human rights and the rule of law [and should be] a nationally owned process that is rooted in the particular needs and conditions of the country in question (Ban 2008).

Others have offered their own definitions (e.g. U.S. Department of State, 2009; McFate 2010:4). These definitions for SSR share emphasis on organizational reform, improved civilian an oversight, the modernization of doctrine or equipment, transparency in budgeting and acquisitions, and accountability to civilian authorities. SSR therefore differs from DDR in both the identity of the target (state vs. non-state actors) and the level at which the policy operates (institutional/organizational vs. individual fighters). Post-war countries can conduct and have conducted one policy, both, or neither.

From the perspective of Western powers, the textbook examples of SSR occurred in post-authoritarian regimes in

-20-

Central and South America, and post-communist regimes in Central and Eastern Europe, the latter group undertaking reforms as part of their accession to NATO during the 1990s. The term can also refer to current NATO members' efforts toward force reductions, ending conscription and converting to an all-volunteer force, and improved oversight of contracting, acquisitions, and budgeting.

As a post-war policy, SSR seems problematic. Even in the best circumstances, reforming the security sector is a complex, highly political, and multi-year process. In a post-war setting, SSR may disrupt the transition to peace, reduce military pressure on rebels to demobilize or stay demobilized, or provoke a coup d'état by the military. A victorious military may resist thoroughgoing reforms in the post-war era on the reasonable grounds that the existing system proved its worth in battle. Fragile post-war countries may not have the institutional capacity or expertise to manage such a complex organizational transformation, especially among civilians newly tasked with overseeing military professionals.

Yet thoroughgoing reform of the security sector may be the fundamental condition for a durable peace: to agree to a demobilization of their private forces, factions must believe that the post-war government and military will not afterwards to crush them. its advantageous position Credible use commitments to root-and-branch reforms-such as the reduction and professionalization of forces, and the subordination of military commanders to the civilian government -- may be the best way to reassure skeptical rebels. Even in the relatively brief time horizon of a war termination and peacebuilding phase, the basic organizational, statutory, and policy frameworks for SSR can be developed, and even commenced.

-21-

Despite the centrality of security sector reform to peace after civil war, I am aware of no scholarly comparative research, or cross-national data, relating SSR to the durability of peace after civil war, except insofar that SSR is considered an aspect of military power sharing, since both address the shape of post-war security sector.

## Military Power Sharing

Military power sharing, also called military integration, is the policy of integrating the rebel armed forces into a new or reformed national army or police force, often coupled with an overall reduction in the number of personnel to pre-war levels, if not further. Like the other forms of power sharing discussed above, military integration is thought to mitigate the risk of war recurrence by building self-enforcing mechanisms into the post-war settlement. A policy of military integration implies that significant numbers of fighters from all sides of the conflict remain under arms, and factions retain some ability to defect from the post-war armed services and return to open combat, though they are formally subordinate to the unified command structure. By remaining at least partially mobilized, factions maintain a residual capacity to punish the post-war government should it renege on the terms of the peace. This residual capacity protects factions; factions should therefore feel less vulnerable in post-war settings characterized by military power sharing.

Military power sharing should help preserve peace through at least three additional mechanisms. An integrated military is less likely to follow orders to punish a faction in a way that a large segment of its organization perceives as illegitimate. This should dampen the government's willingness to use force against its political enemies. Furthermore, integrated military

-22-

and police services are likely to enjoy better trust from the wider community, which should improve their organizational effectiveness. Lastly, military integration should create economic disincentives for future rebellion by offering employment to former rebels, similarly to DDR (Glassmyer and Sambanis 2008). Updating data from Glassmyer and Sambanis (2008) I find 22 attempts at military integration in the five years following the end of civil wars between 1970 and 2013 (22 percent of the total).

Military integration and DDR may functionally overlap if the DDR program recruits some former combatants into the military or police, in addition to reintegrating other former combatants back into society.

#### ECONOMIC RECOVERY, LIBERALIZATION, AND PRIVATIZATION

It is often noted that the most robust finding in the civil war literature is that civil wars are a problem of poor countries (Collier and Hoeffler 2000; Collier, Hoeffler and Roehner 2009; Fearon and Laitin 2003). Collier, Hoeffler, and Söderbom (2008) argue "multinational post-conflict efforts should be concentrated disproportionately in the poorest countries and should focus heavily on economic recovery." In the short run, this can mean stabilizing the currency, reopening and markets, providing electricity on a predictable banks schedule, securing and opening major transit corridors, and increasing the supply of food and fuel. If the war destroyed significant amounts of physical capital and infrastructure, local or international peacebuilders may provide humanitarian assistance to the region until the new infrastructure and institutions of the economy are produced.

-23-

But beyond this immediate post-war recovery, local and international peacebuilders often attempt quite ambitious economic reforms along the lines of those advocated by the World Bank and International Monetary Fund, which have for decades conditioned their financial assistance to poorly-performing and conflict-ridden countries on the liberalization and their economies. privatization of Post-war Tajikistan, for example, signed structural adjustment agreements with the World Bank in 1998, 1999, and 2001, which restructured and privatized farms and state-owned industries, promoted international financial standards and systems among local firms, changed corporate governance rules, retrenched public expenditures, and reformed public financial management and procurement (World Bank 2014). Liberalization and privatization are not confined to post-communist countries: Uganda, Liberia, Rwanda, and Libya have also attempted such reforms, with or without the assistance of the international financial institutions. Both critics and their policies note supporters of the IFIS and that implementation of structural adjustment programs are uneven, delayed, and often manipulated for political ends (Leonard and Straus 2003; Reno 1998, 2002), but the logic of economic reforms in post-war settings remain compelling to many economists and to international peacebuilders.

Collier and Hoeffler present data showing that growth is more sensitive to policy in post-conflict countries than in other countries, and that aid is a particularly effective policy lever in post-war settings because the absorptive capacity of those economies is roughly double the normal level starting about the third year after the conflict ends (Collier and Hoeffler 2004). They argue that thoroughgoing economic reforms supervised and assisted by the international community are particularly important post-war policies. Using cross-national

-24-

statistics, De Soysa and Fjelde (2010) find that "economic freedom" lowers risk of civil war significantly. The mechanisms for reducing conflict have yet to be studied systematically: most proposed mechanisms work indirectly through growth promotion, and directly by lowering the stakes of controlling the government, since many opportunities for personal enrichment and patronage are (theoretically) closed off by liberalization and privatization.

### RECONCILIATION AND POST-CONFLICT JUSTICE

Though first implemented in the aftermath of World War II, and occasionally during the Cold War following regime transitions, post-conflict justice mechanisms onlv became routine policy after the success of the Truth and Reconciliation Commission in post-Apartheid South Africa, which began work in Post-conflict justice institutions are 1994. thought to contribute to the consolidation of peace by promoting equity, justice, and social reconciliation.

Post-conflict justice institutions are multiple. Olson, Payne, and Reiter (2010) and Binningsbø, et al. (2012) identify the most common: truth and reconciliation commissions such as those in South Africa and Liberia; trials for alleged warrelated crimes, some which involve international tribunals or local prosecutions with high degrees of due process and credibility, others involving little more than local trials to implement a repressive victors' justice; amnesties; reparations for war-related death, injury, or property damage; lustration or purges of collaborators from the political, administrative, and military classes; and exile. Olson, Payne, and Reiter (2010) find that amnesty is the most common form of transitional justice after civil war and that amnesty mostly targets rebels

-25-

rather than state agents. Similarly, trials after civil war mostly prosecute rebel opponents, rather than state agents. Binningsbø, et al. report a total of 272 post-conflict justice processes related to 173 conflict episodes between 1946 and 2006, meaning roughly 48 percent of all conflict episodes have at least one post-conflict justice mechanism (Binningsbø, et al. 2010:733). Of the 99 civil wars listed in Appendix B, 15 percent implement a truth and reconciliation process within five years, 26 percent hold trials, 58 percent have amnesties in place, 14 percent provide reparations, 7 percent purge their political system of collaborators, and 14 percent exile key figures from the war.

# RULE OF LAW

Rule-of-law approaches to peacebuilding include policies to ensure the security of person and property, establish rule-based rather than arbitrary governance, constrain the executive, reduce corruption, and improve judicial and bureaucratic performance. Haggard and Tiede (2013) argue that the rule of law encompasses "both basic rights and liberties and the complex political and administrative arrangement that support them." For our purposes, there are at least three distinct components.

# Public Order

Public order involves the protection of individuals, communities, and property from violence or appropriation by the state or third parties. Jones et al. (2005) have identified a minimum threshold of security forces needed to provide public order after civil war. In territories at risk of severe instability, they suggest a minimum ratio of 1,000 troops per 100,000 inhabitants and 150 police per 100,000 inhabitants. In territories at less risk of instability, force ratios may be

-26-

smaller (Jones et al. 2005:19). Since 1989, the United Nations has deployed police to an increasing number of post-conflict environments (Smith, Holt, and Durch 2007). Dobbins and his coauthors (2013) consider internal security and basic public order the sine qua non of all other peacebuilding policies.

### Police, Judicial, and Penal Reforms

Beyond a minimum level of public order, peacebuilders often undertake extensive reforms of the police, judicial, and penal systems to conform their rules and procedures to international norms. International and local peacebuilders frequently train police, judges, corrections officers, administrators, and support staff. Police may adopt new community policing strategies, as did the Kosovo Police Service, and legislatures may change legal codes and adopt new standards of human rights. Of course, post-war government may move away from international norms of governance, a phenomenon discussed below.

# Transparency, Bureaucracy, and Anti-Corruption

International NGOs and some scholars have put increasing focus on the issues of transparency, bureaucracy, and corruption in post-war settings. The U.S. experience in Afghanistan suggests to many that corruption can severely undermine all other peacebuilding efforts (e.g. Galtung and Tisne 2008). The cross-national empirical literature has found conflicting results. Neudorfer and Theuerkauf (2014) find that corruption increases the risk of large-scale ethnic violence by distorting political decision-making and deepening social cleavages (Neudorfer and Theuerkauf 2014). Others follow Huntington (1968) and suggest that corruption can have a stabilizing effect on changing societies (e.g. Fjelde 2009).

-27-

#### PATRONAGE-BASED, ILLIBERAL, AND AUTHORITARIAN APPROACHES TO PEACEBUILDING

Outside the best practices and received wisdom of the international community sit a large collection of more authoritarian approaches to post-war "peacebuilding." Generally speaking, these approaches rely on the use of coercion against sources of political instability, and for that reason they find few advocates among contemporary western scholars and international practitioners. Authoritarian approaches to peacebuilding remain common, however, and should be evaluated for their efficacy, if only to learn why such strategies prove so tempting to local decision-makers.

### Patronage and Civil War Recovery

The converse of liberalization, privatization, and rule-oflaw approaches to peacebuilding are found in a number of authoritarian post-war countries. Patronage is a central feature of politics in many developing countries, especially in Africa, which account for over half of all post-war cases since 1989 (Bratton and van de Walle 1997). Unlike corruption, patronage is not necessarily illegal, being only the exchange of political support and personal favors, including privileged access to public resources. Patron-client networks permeated regimes in newly independent African states and "typically took the form of public sector jobs [and] the distribution of public resources through licenses, contracts and projects," for which clients mobilized political support (Bratton and van de Walle 1997:55).

Evidence from cases for the relationship between patronage and peace is mixed. Patronage-based regimes in oil-rich countries such as Libya, Gabon, Saudi Arabia, and the Gulf States can have quite long tenures, and decades of domestic peace. However, patronage-based systems in sub-Saharan Africa

-28-

are generally much less successful at avoiding civil conflict, even in oil-rich countries like Nigeria and Angola.

Dobbins and his coauthors argue that coopting existing patronage networks into the post-war political coalition is essential to establishing peace in the short run, but that this strategy risks entrenching networks that will undermine long run efforts to build sustainable political institutions (Dobbins et al. 2013 238-239). In their view, the post-war government will be dependent on these patronage networks for political support, and any effort by the government to develop autonomous capacity will be resisted since it may be directed against the patronage system in the future.

Empirical tests of these hypotheses have produced conflicting results. Hartzell, Hoddie, and Bauer (2010) find evidence that adopting a package of liberalizing policy prescriptions, embodied by a structural adjustment program offered by the International Monetary Fund, is associated with greater risk of civil war onset, holding other factors constant. They suggest that SAPs, and liberalization policies more generally, create winners and losers: specifically they threaten the personal wealth and power of well-connected, politicallyactive incumbents in the bureaucracy, state-owned enterprises, and producer syndicates, which may increase their willingness to organize violent confrontation with the state.

A post-war regime's ability to compensate any "losers" in the liberalization process seems to be marginal. In the first place, it seems unlikely that the welfare gains from economic liberalization can be realized during the relatively short postwar time horizon adopted by peacebuilders (on the order of five to ten years). In addition, as the state's control over the economy is reduced, the ability of political leaders to offer stability-enhancing patronage, social welfare spending,

-29-

development programs, or other forms side payments is increasingly constrained.

# Illiberal Peacebuilding

At. the less bloody end of the authoritarian policy continuum, states responding to the end of major hostilities may use the opportunity to finish dismantling a rebel movement using illegal, punitive, or unjust means. For example, after Sri Lanka vanquished the Tamil Tigers in 2009, the government pursued an increasingly authoritarian governing strategy not only in the Tamil homeland but also against the loyal opposition in the south. The government, the military, or their political allies appropriated land, buildings, and industrial facilities they claim were associated with the rebels (International Crisis Group 2012b). The government held hundreds of alleged rebels and collaborators without trial for five years, often incommunicado and in deplorable conditions, and human rights groups have accused the Sri Lankan authorities of systematic torture of former combatants (International Crisis Group 2013a). The government held post-war elections in the north, in which the mainstream Tamil party won a landslide victory; yet, de facto political power in the north remains in the hands of the military and the national government in Colombo (International Crisis Group 2013b). The cultural and language rights that represented the core grievance of the Tamil community were nowhere on the national political agenda (International Crisis Group 2012a). War-time policies that restricted political rights, civil liberties, and due process remained in place, despite the end of combat and the full dissolution of the Tamil rebel organization; the government moved against political opponents, the judiciary, human rights advocates, and critical media -- even against loyal opposition parties in the south that

were previously in government (International Crisis Group 2013a).

Post-war politics in Sri Lanka were characterized by the of wartime policies into peacetime, extension and were criticized as the formalization of a "national security state" similar to regimes in Pakistan or Egypt. Sri Lanka is following common authoritarian practice after civil wars: forming а single-party or personal regimes, often with the backing of the post-war military. Such strategies have been present in (at least) post-war Cambodia, Chechnya, Ethiopia, Eritrea, Rwanda, Uganda, and Yemen. Though perhaps formally democratic, these countries evolved into single-party dominant regimes using extensive patronage, cooptation of rivals, harassment of political opposition and critical media, and the manipulation of party laws, electoral rules, eligibility requirements, and politically-compromised courts. Recent elections suggest these illiberal post-war policies may soon be reversed.

## Coercive Approaches to Establishing Order after Civil War Ends

On the more violent end of the authoritarian policy their proxies continuum, states or may conduct post-war pacification campaigns through forced relocations, targeted assassinations, or mass killings. For example, human rights groups have accused the Kagame regime in Rwanda of assassinating opposition figures in exile, some of whom were connected to the genocide, but others who apparently only objected to the president's continued rule (Human Rights Watch 2014). Prominent figures in Russia, variously connected to the wars in Chechnya, have been assassinated or died under mysterious circumstances (Human Rights Watch 2009b); the Kremlin-backed president of Chechnya ordered his forces to burn the homes of the families of alleged rebels (Human Rights Watch 2009a). Applying data from

-31-

the Political Terror Scale Dataset to the list in Appendix B, I find 34 percent of post-war episodes witnessed mass violence by the government within five years, and 44 percent see political repression.

### OTHER APPROACHES

Appendix A gives the catalogue of post-war policies I found in my review. Other approaches involve basic governance such returning displaced persons, forming new ministries or reforming old ones, creating new administrative districts, and conducting basic social surveillance such as issuing identification cards and holding a census. Other policies center on military reformation, such as creating specialized internal security forces with counterinsurgent or counterterrorist capabilities, or securing border zones and rural areas. Public works are another commonly advocated approach, including jobs programs and road building.

Dobbins and his coauthors have argued that favorable external influences, what they term geopolitics, can dramatically influence the success or failure of post-war peacebuilding. In their view, the activities of major powers can have a benign or malign affect on the course of a post-war period to the extent that it is the determinative factor.

Others organizations focus on non-governmental and civilapproaches reconstruction society to post-war and reconciliation. The US Institutes of Peace, the Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe, and others train local media, host conferences promoting social reconciliation and mediation, and help establish local non-governmental organizations to promote human rights and good governance. The empowerment of women, minorities, youth, and other at-risk

-32-

communities are often the focus of such approaches. Bigombe, Collier, and Sambanis (2000) suggest that remittances should be constrained or redirected to sever linkages between diaspora communities and rebel movements.

#### QUALITATIVE COMPARATIVE ANALYSIS

civil war and peacebuilding Recent research on are dominated by quantitative studies exploiting some form of multiple regression analysis, typically using general linear, history, or logistic models. These correlational event approaches have yielded important insights into the origins, duration, termination, recurrence, and other qualities of civil wars. One methodological difficulty of a correlational approach is that civil wars, despite their importance to comparative political development and to the international system as a whole, remain a relatively uncommon phenomenon since World War II (N  $\sim$  150), and, for a number of key research questions, covariates can grow well into the double digits. The nature of the data means that regressions are relatively inefficient-they require stronger evidence to reject the null hypothesis of no relation between a variable (e.g. policy) and the outcome (e.g. peace). More to the point here, regression analyses are not optimal tools for examining configurations of policies or conditional relations of policies because regressions are conventionally limited to two or three interaction terms. If we have a peacebuilding theory that includes four or more conditions working together, multiple regression is not a terribly effective research strategy. Instead, researchers studying cross-national and cross-conflict patterns of civil wars and their aftermaths should strive to supplement conventional regression analyses with alternative methods, including more explicitly comparative approaches.

I take such an approach here. I use sociologist Charles Ragin's Qualitative Comparative Analysis (QCA) to analyze the combinations of peacebuilding policies that have characterized

-34-

each post-civil war episode since 1970, whether implemented by international actors or local actors on their own (i.e. by the post-war government). QCA allows me to test a long list of peacebuilding strategies against the historical record, using data 'mined' from the quantitative civil war literature and, among other benefits, to sift through the historical record for patterns of strategies in a way that conventional regression analyses do not.

Because Qualitative Comparative Analysis remains а method political relatively uncommon in science and international relations, a brief summary is appropriate. Ragin introduced QCA in 1987, and he and his coauthors have refined and championed the method over the ensuing decades (key texts include Ragin 1987; Ragin 2000; Ragin 2008b; Ragin and Rihoux 2004; Rihoux and Ragin 2008; Ragin and Sonnet 2005). Though QCA was initially slow to gain adherents, comparative social scientists have employed it with increasing frequency since about 2000, with over 30 published articles in 2010 and 2011 each (Thiem and Duşa 2013). Nonetheless, QCA has yet to make into major American political inroads the science and international relations journals, despite its promise for a great number of cross-national and cross-conflict research programs.<sup>3</sup>

At its core, QCA is a method for making formal, tightlystructured comparisons of the sort common in historical, qualitative, ethnographic, and small-N comparative social science, yet do so across a far larger number of cases than would be possible using 'manual' techniques. QCA requires the

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> I count only eight substantive articles and four methodology articles using QCA since 1987 in the American Journal of Political Science, the American Political Science Review, Comparative Politics, World Politics, International Organization, International Security, the Journal of Conflict Resolution, and the Journal of Peace Studies.

researcher to score cases for the presence or absence of causal conditions and for the outcome of interest. The researcher then uses Boolean notation to assess configurations of these causal conditions, and then use Boolean algebra to reduce these 'causal recipes' to their essential ingredients. Ragin and others have introduced metrics for evaluating the significance and explanatory power QCA's findings. There are now several software packages available to conduct QCA; I conducted the present analyses using Ragin's fsQCA program and the QCA package in the R program (Ragin and Davey 2014; Duşa and Thiem 2014).<sup>4</sup>

Interpreting the results of this chapter will require understanding four distinctive features of QCA, especially as it contrasts with conventional quantitative methods.

First, QCA is grounded in set theory, an ontological approach to social science that focuses on the 'set memberships' and 'set relations' of empirical cases, including subset and superset relations. In the language of set theory, for example, the research program on peacekeeping effectiveness examines the relationship between two sets of post-civil war countries: the set of countries that host a peacekeeping operation and the set of countries that do not experience a recurrence of civil war.<sup>5</sup> claim that post-war countries An (incorrect) that host peacekeeping operations never experience a recurrence of civil war within five years is a claim about a set relation: that countries hosting a peacekeeping operation are a perfect subset of countries that do not experience a recurrence of civil war. In this example, a perfect subset relationship means that peace implied by peacekeepers; that peacekeeping cannot occur is

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>4</sup> Some other options are the stand-alone software programs kirq (Rubinson 2014) and Tosmana (Cronqvist 2011), and the "fuzzy" program in STATA (Longest and Vaisey 2008).

 $<sup>^{\</sup>scriptscriptstyle 5}$  I use only country-cases in my examples, but QCA can also be used for individual- or group-level data.

peace following it; and that the without presence of logically sufficient peacekeepers is to explain the consolidation of peace. Note that the subset relationship does not mean that peacekeepers are logically necessary to peace, since there may be other avenues to peace without peacekeepers.<sup>6</sup> Among its other advantages, QCA provides a way for researchers to examine which causal conditions, or combinations of causal conditions, approximate perfect subsets of the outcome, and therefore allow researchers to make claims about necessary and sufficient conditions for the outcomes of interest.

To score these set memberships researchers typically use crisp or fuzzy sets.<sup>7</sup> Crisp sets require bivalent data: scored 1.0 for the presence of the condition (full membership in the set) and 0.0 for absence of the condition (full non-membership in the set). Alternately, fuzzy sets allow degrees of membership or non-membership, and researchers score cases using intervals or continuous data ranging between 0.0 (full non-membership in the set) and 1.0 (full membership in the set). With fuzzy sets, a score of 0.5 indicates the crossover point, or point of maximum ambiguity of set membership. Commonly used, continuous data such as GDP per capita or barrels of exported oil can be easily calibrated and transformed into fuzzy sets following procedures outlined by Ragin (Ragin 2008b, chapter 5).

To give a concrete example, consider a researcher of peacekeeping effectiveness who wishes to score interesting set memberships for such cases. Post-war Kosovo (1999 to 2004) is such a case. Some theoretically relevant crisp set memberships for Kosovo are:

 $<sup>^{\</sup>rm 6}$  Note that, unlike the correlation coefficients generated by conventional quantitative methods, set relationships do not imply symmetry: there are (likely) multiple paths to the successful consolidation of peace, and therefore the set of peaceful post-war countries is not coincidental to (or a subset of) countries with peacekeeping operations. <sup>7</sup> Less common are multi-value QCA (mvQCA) and temporal QCA (tQCA).

- 1.0 for membership in "the set of post-war territories that hosted a UN peacebuilding operation"
- 1.0 for membership in "the set of post-war territories that received large amounts of official development assistance"
- 0.0 for membership in "the set of post-war territories that exported oil"
- 0.0 for membership in "the set of post-war territories with a residual insurgency"
- 1.0 for membership in "the set of post-war territories that held early elections"

We also score the outcome variable:

• 1.0 for membership in "the set of post-war territories that remained at peace for at least 5 years after the end of major hostilities"

The second distinctive feature of QCA is the generation of truth tables from these set membership scores. A truth table is logically-possible combinations of all а list of set memberships. For example, a researcher may hypothesize that the presence of three factors explains the consolidation of peace after civil war (PEACE): the presence of peacekeepers (PKO), the implementation of early elections (EARLY), and the receipt of large flows of foreign official development assistance (ODA). Using crisp sets, the researcher scores all 99 post-war episodes since 1970 on these four set memberships (PKO, EARLY, ODA, PEACE). A truth table representing all logically possible combinations of these conditions would have 2^4 or 16 rows, corresponding to two possible conditions (1.0 or 0.0) for each input conditions and one output condition. The of three researcher would then record on the table the number of cases that correspond to each of the 16 rows. Using actual data, the truth table for this crude example is in Table 2.1.

PKO	EARLY	ODA	PEACE	Number of Instances
1	1	1	1	9
1	1	1	0	0
1	1	0	1	7
1	1	0	0	0
1	0	1	1	1
1	0	1	0	6
1	0	0	1	1
1	0	0	0	0
0	1	1	1	13
0	1	1	0	6
0	1	0	1	28
0	1	0	0	5
0	0	1	1	4
0	0	1	0	5
0	0	0	1	13
0	0	0	0	1

Table 2.1: Truth Table for Three Major Post-War Policies

Three policy configurations have unambiguous results: PKO\*EARLY\*ODA, PKO\*EARLY\*oda, and PKO\*early\*oda correspond only to PEACE.<sup>8</sup> They are not associated with any cases of civil war recurrence within five years. Thus these three configurations are perfect subsets of the outcome.

The other configurations contain some contradictions-- that is, they lead to both "PEACE" and "peace" outcomes. The configurations pko\*early\*ODA and pko\*EARLY\*ODA are recorded as contradictions, using conventional thresholds.

Every configuration in this example has instances of success, failure, or both. That is not always the case. Configurations can associate with zero outcomes at all (the outcome is neither present nor absent). When configurations are

 $<sup>^{\</sup>rm 8}$  In QCA, presence of a condition is indicated in ALL CAPS, absence by lower case letters.

not represented by any historical cases, they are termed logical remainders. $^{9}$ 

With a truth table, the researcher can evaluate the hypothesized relationships between the causal configurations and outcomes of interest. (The construction of truth tables with fuzzy sets requires a few additional steps, but follows the same logic as crisp sets.<sup>10</sup>) Note that each observed case can exhibit exactly one configuration. Outcomes are conceptualized as the intersections (unions) of input conditions. If the information gathered in the truth table suggests a clear relationship between a causal configuration and an outcome (success or failure), then the causal configuration is a logical subset of the outcome, though not necessarily the only one.

A third distinctive feature of QCA is the application of Boolean algebra to the information summarized in the truth table. Boolean algebra first gives the solution, which is simply the union (logical AND) of all the causal combinations that cooccur with the outcome present. That is, the solution is a list of input configurations that (separately) approximate subsets of the outcome. In our peacekeeping example, if we define configurations with a success-to-failure ratio of 3:1 and better as "success," configurations below 1:3 as "failure," and

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>9</sup> Because of the limited diversity of social and historical data, the researcher should expect to find many logical remainders (Ragin and Sonnet 2004). Researchers must decide whether to incorporate the logical remainders into the minimization process. The intermediate solution advocated by Ragin, and employed here, is to incorporate logical remainders to the extent that existing theoretical and substantive knowledge indicates <u>unambiguously</u> that a causal condition operates on the outcome in one direction. This step allows us to interpolate a "missing" historical case-- an 'easy' counterfactual that allows us to continue the Boolean minimization of the solution. See Ragin (2008, Chapter 5) for an explanation of this process.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>10</sup> Rows in fuzzy set truth tables correspond to corners in multidimensional vector space. The extent to which a case exhibits the configuration represented in a fuzzy set truth table row is given as the lowest score from among the causal conditions. For example, a post-war case that scores 0.8 on UNPKO, 0.6 on ODA, and 0.9 on ELECT would have a overall membership score for that causal configuration of 0.6. Using a simple rule that a membership score above the cross-over point in a fuzzy set (0.5) represents a case "more in than out" of the causal recipe, the researcher can determine the configuration of each case, and count the number of cases for each causal recipe.

configurations between those ratios as contradictions, then the solution in Boolean and QCA notation is:

(1) PKO\*EARLY\*ODA + PKO\*EARLY\*oda + PKO\*early\*oda + pko\*EARLY\*oda + pko\*early\*oda <=> PEACE

This equation states that the combination of policies in the five terms is a necessary and sufficient explanation for PEACE (e.g. If PEACE, then one of the five configurations. If one of the five configurations, then PEACE).

QCA then uses Boolean algebra to reduce these logical expressions to those that are minimally sufficient to explain the outcome. These reduced expressions called prime implicants. In this crude example, Boolean algebra reduces the solution in equation (1) to:

(2) PKO\*EARLY + oda <=> PEACE

This solution states that the presence of peacekeepers in conjunction with early elections is sufficient to explain peace, and that the absence of official development assistance is also sufficient to explain peace. Together they are necessary to explain peace. Official development assistance is superfluous to the first policy configuration, and both peacekeepers and early elections are superfluous to the second policy configuration; they have been reduced out. (We might interpret the second term-- the absence of official development assistance-- as capturing a country's financial independence or freedom to implement policy without international involvement.)

A final distinctive feature of QCA is that it allows a researcher to assess her findings by producing metrics that are roughly analogous to a regression table. Set-theoretic

-41-

<u>consistency</u> indicates the extent to which an input or configuration of inputs accurately describe one path to the outcome-- the extent to which an input or configuration of inputs approximate a perfect subset of the outcome, or what we might call its explanatory significance. <u>Set-theoretic coverage</u> indicates the extent to which an input or configuration of inputs explain the <u>entire</u> outcome set, and thus indicates the explanatory power of a given input or configuration of inputs. In QCA, both consistency and coverage are given as scores between 1.0 and 0.0, with higher scores representing better consistency or coverage.

QCA is a useful method to triangulate findings from regression-based approaches to the cross-national study of civil wars for a number of reasons. First, the major theories of postwar peacebuilding are easily transformed into the language of set theory, which I have done in Appendix C. Second, much if not most of the civil war and conflict data collected is essentially qualitative and bivalent in nature-- coding for example the presence or absence of peacekeeping troops or power-sharing agreements. QCA permits the conceptualization of this bivalent data as bivalent set-membership scores. Third, QCA explicitly recognizes causal complexity and equifinality, essentially turning the research strategy of conventional regression analysis on its head. Whereas regression analyses begin with the assumption that explanatory variables are independent of each other, and then gradually introduce interaction terms to test for causal complexity, QCA begins from a perspective of causal complexity and then strips away input conditions that are discovered to be logically redundant, unsupported by the empirical record, or theoretically implausible. Lastly, QCA's primary advantage remains that it permits the sort of rich qualitative comparisons common in small-N research, but across a

-42-

far larger number of cases that would be possible otherwise, which makes is a fitting method to examine the record of policy configurations implemented by local and international peacebuilders after civil war.

#### Data

compare and evaluate the effectiveness of post-war То policy configurations using QCA, I leverage the vast amount of data published in the quantitative civil war and peacekeeping literatures since the late 1990s. This research program has generated scores of major articles on the onset, duration, termination, recurrence, and other qualities of civil war (see Blattman and Miguel, 2010, for a survey). Some key figures in this research program are Paul Collier, Anke Hoeffler, James Fearon, David Laitin, Michael Doyle, Nicolas Sambanis, Barbara Walter, Nils Petter Gleditsch, Virginia Page Fortna, Caroline Hartzell, Matthew Hoddie, Peter Wallensteen, Håvard Hegre, and their respective co-authors. Some key organizations in this research program include the World Bank, the Uppsala Conflict Data Program, the Peace Research Institute Oslo, the Journal of Conflict Resolution, and the Journal of Peace Research. Working mainly from the political science and economics disciplines, these and many other researchers have examined dozens of correlates to civil conflict and civil war, such as economic opportunity structures (Collier and Hoeffler 2000), the feasibility of rebellion (Collier, Hoeffler, and Roehner 2009), economic shocks (Miguel, Satyanath, and Sergenti 2004), ethnicity (Fearon and Laitin 2003; Posner 2004; Montalvo and Reynal-Querol 2005), rough terrain (Fearon and Laitin 2003; Buhaug, Gates, and Lujala 2009), primary commodity exports (Ross 2004; Fearon 2005), political institutions and governance (World Development Report 2011), peacekeeping missions (Doyle and Sambanis 2000, 2006; Fortna 2004, 2008; Gilligan and Sergenti 2008), peace treaties and power-sharing agreements (Walter 1997, 1999, 2004; Hartzell and Hoddie 2003, 2007; Mattes and Savun

-44-

2009, 2010), border sanctuaries (Salehyan 2007), elections (Brancati and Snyder 2011, 2012), and political decentralization (Brancati 2006). Some recent efforts have yielded major new data on coups d'état (Powell and Thyne 2011), pro-government militias (Carey, Mitchell, and Lowe 2013), non-violent political protest (Chenoweth and Lewis 2013), and the geo-referencing of conflict incidents (Raleigh, et al. 2010; Sundberg and Melander 2013), among many, many others.

I synthesized these data in three steps. First, working from the UCDP/PRIO Armed Conflict Dataset and the UCDP Conflict Encyclopedia, I generated a list of all civil-conflict episodes since 1970.<sup>11 12</sup> The Armed Conflict Dataset (ACD) reports 320 armed, internal conflict episodes since 1970 that exceeded 25 battle-related deaths.<sup>13</sup> Of these, 287 episodes had ended, defined as a gap in fighting of at least one year. The other 33 episodes experienced fighting during the 2013 calendar year and are recorded as ongoing conflicts. From this list, I extracted the most-intense, highest-fatality conflict episodes: those that exceeded 1,000 battle-related deaths. These I define as "civil war episodes." I adjusted the episodes in six countries (Algeria, Chad, Philippines, Sudan, and Uganda) because ACD coding decisions lump together distinct conflicts (with independent rebel groups) so long as the groups are each attempting to overthrow the central government in the same time period. Disaggregating these cases added six conflict-episodes

 $<sup>^{11}</sup>$  I chose 1970 because most cross-national indicators reach back roughly this far.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>12</sup> The UCDP/PRIO Armed Conflict Dataset defines conflict as "a contested incompatibility that concerns government and/or territory where the use of armed force between two parties, of which at least on is the government of a state, results in at least 25 battle-related deaths" (ACD codebook 4-2013, p. 1). Note this definition excludes communal violence and one-sided violence (mass killing).

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>13</sup> A conflict episode is a period of sustained fighting, beginning when a dispute exceeds 25 battle deaths, and ending when the last reported fatalities are followed by a year of inactivity; a new episode is therefore coded if violence restarts after a year or more of inactivity (ACD Codebook, 11). Depending on the case, war episodes began and ended as reported in the ACD, the UCDP Dyadic Dataset (1-2013), or the UCDP Conflict Termination dataset (2010-1).

to my list. By my count, there have been 99 completed civil war episodes since 1970, with another 26 civil war episodes ongoing.

Appendix B lists this universe of episodes since 1970 in alphabetical order. I record the date, if any, that a war (1,000 or more battle deaths) or lower-level conflict (25 to 999 battle deaths) recurs. This list is broadly consistent with similar lists published by the Correlates of War project, Collier and Hoeffler (2000), Fearon and Laitin (2003), Doyle and Sambanis (2006), and others.<sup>14</sup> I define a post-war episode as the five years following the end of a civil war episode.

The second step in synthesizing these data was to take the catalogue of policies listed in Appendix A and frame them as discrete policies in the language of crisp set memberships. Generally, this was a straightforward procedure since most of the policy alternatives that I want to test had been previously conceptualized as bivalent indicators in the quantitative civil war and peacekeeping literatures. I created set membership categories with an eye for clarity and easy scoring.

The third step in synthesizing the data was to 'mine' the theoretical, practitioner, and case study literatures for crossnational or cross-conflict indicators on individual post-war policies for each post-war period. Because of sharp differences in coding practices within the research program (including, importantly, conflict end dates), conforming this 'mined' data to my 99 cases was quite laborious, requiring frequent consultation of individual codebooks and sometimes careful recoding of indicators based on raw data supplied by authors.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>14</sup> One important difference is that I select war episodes based on fatality numbers within a given episode, rather than cumulatively across the entire conflict, which might consist of several separate episodes. For example, other lists of civil wars typically include periodic but lowintensity conflicts that, over decades, accumulate over 1,000 fatalities, such as conflict in Iran's Kurdish northwest or the Casamance region in Senegal. Thus, Appendix A is a shorter list of more intense wars than is commonly reported in the academic literature.

Generating the lists in Appendices A, B, and C took the majority of my time on this project.

### POLICY COMBINATIONS

To explore the post-war policy configurations associated with a sustained peace, I performed several crisp set qualitative comparative analyses. Based on the empirical and theoretical literatures, and the findings in section five, I developed a core model of 10 input conditions to score for all post-war episodes since 1970:

where

- peace is having no recurrence of war within five years
- pko is the presence of more than 1,000 peacekeeping troops
- dem is governing using a democratic regime by year five
- early is holding any nationwide election within 2.5 years
- powshar is having a formal power-sharing agreement in place
- decen is having a decentralized political system
- <u>ddr</u> is implementing a disarmament, demobilization, and reintegration program
- <u>sap</u> is concluding a structural adjustment program with either the World Bank or IMF
- <u>oda</u> is receiving on average greater than 5 percent of gross national income in official development assistance
- pcj is implementing any form of post-conflict justice
- <u>army</u> is having higher than the median per capita security personnel (5.54 per 1,000 residents)

This model reflects tradeoffs between comprehensiveness and the desire for interpretable results in QCA, since including fewer conditions improves interpretability. In selecting policies to test, I sought input conditions that (1) most postwar decision-makers could implement, rather than conditions that essentially predetermined, (2) reflected were inputs or processes rather than outcomes, (3) captured the range of theoretical claims in the literatures, and (4) was a direct measure of a policy rather than a proxy for it. I dropped from the model set membership scoring for high-income or uppermiddle-income economies, oil and natural gas producers, and receiving diaspora support, since decision-makers cannot easily modulate these inputs in the short time frame of a post-war period. For the same reasons, I do not include common controls for ethnolinguistic fractionalization, mountainous terrain, population size, and others. I also set aside set membership scoring for most military policies and materiel to test in a separate model.

Table 2.2 gives the parsimonious solution to the crisp set analysis, with the configurations grouped by congruence, offset improve readability, and numbered for reference. to The parsimonious solution in QCA uses the logical remainders (configurations with no instances) to reduce the solution to the fewest terms possible. It is the most aggressive minimization strategy, and therefore can be interpreted as the core of the essential prime implicants for distinguishing between success cases (peace) and failure cases (war recurrence). Note that post-war episodes can be covered by more than one prime implicant -- such cases are overdetermined. The raw coverage score gives the proportion of success cases explained, while the unique coverage score gives the proportion of success cases covered uniquely by that configuration.

-49-

Table	2.2:	csQCA	Results	for	Core	Model	(No	War	Recurrence;	May
have ]	Low-le	evel vi	olence) <sup>15</sup>							

Configuration	Raw Coverage	Unique Coverage	Consistency
(1) PKO*EARLY	0.21	0.01	1.00
(2) pko*powshar*decen*pcj*ARMY	0.16	0.03	1.00
(3) EARLY*DECEN*DDR	0.29	0.07	0.96
(4) EARLY*DECEN*sap	0.18	0.04	1.00
(5) DECEN*sap*ODA	0.07	0.03	1.00
(6) powshar*oda*army	0.22	0.08	1.00
(7) powshar*oda*pcj	0.21	0.01	1.00
(8) powshar*oda*dem*SAP	0.13	0.05	1.00
(9) DEM*ODA	0.08	0.01	1.00
(10) POWSHAR*sap*oda	0.09	0.01	1.00
(11) dem*POWSHAR*ddr*army	0.04	0.01	1.00
(12) pko*POWSHAR*DDR*ARMY	0.07	0.01	1.00
(13) pko*DDR*sap	0.14	0.01	1.00

Solution coverage: 0.986842 Solution consistency: 0.986842

Each of the 13 policy configurations represents one path to peace after civil war; some configurations explain a greater number of successful cases than others, ranging from almost 30 percent of such cases explained by EARLY\*DECEN\*DDR to only 4 percent of such cases explained by dem\*POWSHAR\*ddr\*army. Most post-war episodes are covered by more than one configuration, which is indicated by the low unique coverage scores. Overall the solution set explains over 98 percent of successful cases.

## PEACEKEEPING FORCES AND EARLY ELECTIONS

The presence of peacekeeping troops is a necessary condition in only one post-war policy configuration:

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>15</sup> The reader is reminded that consistency is the approximation of a subset relationship, and raw coverage is the proportion of all success cases covered (including cases covered by more than one configuration). Unique coverage is the proportion of success cases covered uniquely by the configuration.

### (Conf. 1) PKO\*EARLY

Configuration 1 indicates that the presence of peacekeeping troops in conjunction with early elections is sufficient to explain the presence of peace; this configuration accounts for one-fifth of successful cases.

Why might these two necessary conditions together form a cohesive, successful post-war strategy? Early elections 1) may confer legitimacy on presence of the international peacekeepers, 2) begin the process of political normalization, 3) provide peaceful avenues for personal advancement to former rebels, 4) signal a commitment for a relatively quick transfer of sovereignty to locals, and 5) create local partners to govern jointly with the international mission and provide credible political communications to the public. UN Secretaries General have repeatedly made such claims with regards to UN complex peacebuilding efforts. For example, the United Nations Interim Administration Mission in Kosovo (UNMIK) viewed holding elections as early as possible as critical (Annan 2000a). After deployment in June 1999, UNMIK immediately established an interim authority to advise it and communicate with Kosovar society. UNMIK held successful province-wide municipal elections within 15 months, and held province-wide assembly elections within 27 months. Establishing local institutions of selfgovernment was "an essential element in the creation of longterm stability in Kosovo... increasing inclusion of its people in the administration of the province to give them greater responsibility for its development" (Annan 2000b).

Not all countries are capable of holding elections within 30 months of the end of major hostilities. Often the basic infrastructure of elections is missing: there are no civil

-51-

registers or voter rolls, locals with experience as poll workers, electoral districts, political party and election laws, available or adequately secure ballot boxes, or even legitimate political parties. In other cases, both the candidates and the lack experience with and a basic understanding voters of elections in democracies, such as the role and origins of political parties, party programs and manifestos; the role of partisan and non-partisan media; and familiarity with ballots and how their counting translates into seats in a legislature. Post-war DR Congo, for example, delayed elections from 2001 to 2005 while factions, neighboring countries, the and international community negotiated a formal peace agreement, subsequently followed by the government and the UN mission basic for elections. organizing the structures Other circumstances delayed elections as well. Rwandan and Ugandan troops only withdrew during 2003, communal violence was widespread throughout the period, and political parties more closely resembled militias or gangs and needed to be reoriented away from rebellion and toward responsible government (Dobbins, et al. 2008).

Looking back at Table 2.2, peacekeepers are also <u>consistent</u> with but not necessary to nine other policy configurations (3 through 11); however, the presence of peacekeeping troops would preclude peace in configurations 2, 12, and 13.

These findings indicate that third party peacekeeping missions involving substantial numbers of troops must hold early elections, otherwise the presence of peacekeepers is redundant or even harmful.

If an international peacekeeping mission, working with locals, cannot hold or decides against holding early elections, policy configurations 5 through 11 are still open to them. These strategies are consistent with the presence of peacekeepers and

-52-

late elections. However, if the mission selects one of these other policy configurations, the presence of peacekeepers is no longer necessary to avoid a recurrence of civil war: their presence does not contribute to the sorting of cases into successes and failures. Other conditions are doing the work.

This finding directly challenges the peacebuilding consensus that has developed over the past 20 years. In particular, it challenges assumptions about the centrality of interventions security third-party and quarantees to explanations of civil war termination and the consolidation of peace. Peacekeeping missions are not selected randomly across civil war cases (King and Zeng 2007, Gilligan and Stedman 2003). international resources for Given finite and patience peacekeeping operations, distinguishing circumstances for successful peacekeepers is vital. The findings here suggest the single salient criterion is the feasibility and advisability of holding early elections. Ιf the international community determines that early elections are infeasible or inadvisable to post-war politics, local and international peacebuilders should adopt an alternative path to political order. The international community can thereby conserve scarce resources for the circumstances where peacekeepers are essential.

## LOCAL POLITICS AND PATRONAGE STRATEGY

Another coherent strategy that emerges from the QCA and explains roughly half the cases is a <u>Local Politics and</u> <u>Patronage Strategy</u>. There are three variants, which can be represented by the equations:

(Conf. 3, 4) EARLY\*DECEN\*(DDR + sap)
(Conf. 5) DECEN\*sap\*ODA

-53-

In the first equation, early nationwide elections operate in conjunction with political decentralization and <u>either</u> a DDR program <u>or</u> the absence of a structural adjustment program. I hypothesize that Configurations 3 and 4 represent post-war processes that funnel former combatants-- especially junior grade and field grade officers-- into local employment opportunities-- especially local government employment.

The logic of Configurations 3 and 4 proceeds as follows. Early elections signal to former combatants that the political system is at least somewhat permeable -- that actors who can marshal political resources and generate political support can secure political office. Political office in developing countries is often quite lucrative. For potential political entrepreneurs emerging from the civil war, the problem is the relative scarcity of political and administrative offices; securing good jobs in the capital is difficult for all but the highest-ranking officers; junior-grade and field-grade officers are too numerous and most presumably lack a large enough constituency to secure national office (otherwise they would be general officers in the rebel forces). Decentralized political systems mitigate this problem by opening avenues for political advancement to a greater number of actors. Early elections and decentralization are complementary, necessary conditions for this strategy to operate.

I argue that the final ingredients of Configurations 3 and 4 represent access to the opportunities offered by decentralized political systems. Former rebels need help reintegrating with their communities, as well as gathering resources to form or join a local political machine, which could be provided by DDR programs indicated in Configuration 3. Or the entrepreneurs need assurances that government jobs or private employment

-54-

opportunities will be available. Signing onto a structural adjustment program signals both that they government payroll will be cut and that the private employment markets are weak. Thus the absence of an SAP is a necessary condition to maintain peace in Configuration 4.

### DOMINATION STRATEGY

Configuration 2 contains many necessary conditions, but together they suggests a strategy of political and military domination by the post-war government:

## (Conf. 2) pko\*powshar\*decen\*pcj\*ARMY

The presence of large numbers of security forces (ARMY) in conjunction with the absence of peacekeepers (pko) implies that the post-war government can move against political opponents relatively unhindered: the government is in full control of its internal security architecture. Its words are backed with force, and third parties lack troops to interpose themselves between former combatants. The domination is also political in the sense that this strategy requires the absence of a power-sharing agreement and the presence of a centralized political system. Lastly, this strategy requires that post-war government reject any post-war justice mechanisms, including amnesties or trials for former rebels. Configuration 2 covers post-war episodes in Eritrea (1991 to 1996), Iran (1982 to 1987; 1988 to 1993), Iraq (1996 to 2001), Mauritania (1978 to 1983), and six episodes in Myanmar.

The roster of cases covered by this policy configuration indicates that the strategy falls outside international norms and best practices. It is unlikely that the United Nations, the

-55-

United States, European powers, and others would urge this strategy on a post-war government that they were advising. <u>Understanding this strategy is still useful, however, since it</u> <u>helps explains strategic behavior in post-war countries whose</u> actions the international community hopes to shape.

Nuri al Maliki's government in Iraq arguably followed this strategy after the exit of U.S. forces in 2011, especially with regards to the Sunni Arab community. He refused to decentralize power to a Sunni federal entity patterned on the Kurdistan Regional Government, he excluded Sunni Arabs from key security positions in the cabinet, and he kept the portfolios of defense, interior, and security for himself. Maliki's adoption of this strategy depended on the withdrawal of international troops, which give him a freer hand against (Sunni Arab) political opposition. His government also needed to control enough loyalist forces to view this domination strategy as feasible. Maliki's strategy was ill-advised: his attempt at dominating Sunni Arab areas provoked a new rebellion from a coalition of former Ba'athists and jihadists. It is important to understand that a large proportion of post-war governments will find the domination strategy enticing, precisely because it has proven historically successful, Maliki's case notwithstanding.

## DURABLE STALEMATES AND SUPPRESSING POLITICAL OPPOSITION

Interpreting configurations six, seven, and eight is challenging because the strategies mostly consist of the <u>absence</u> of certain policies. The three configurations can be factored and represented in one equation:

(Conf. 6, 7, 8) powshar\*oda\*(army + pcj + dem\*SAP)

-56-

The terms inside the parentheses are policies that substitute for one another in this strategy. Looking back at the cases, the configurations appear related to two types of war outcomes -- stalemates and successfully driving the rebel groups underground. If we define stalemates as situations where the fighting stops but rebel groups maintain control of some territory, and we define suppression as situations where the fighting stops and the rebel movement is shattered or forced underground. Table 2.3 groups the cases covered by configurations 6, 7, and 8.

	(6) powshar*oda*army	(7) powshar*oda*pcj	(8) powshar*oda*dem*SAP
Stalemate Cases	CHA7, CON1, IND1, PHI3	CHA7, IRN1, IRN2, LEB1, MYA1, MYA2, MYA3, MYA4, MYA5, MYA6	AZE1, CON1, LEB1, MOR1, MYA1
Suppression Cases	ALG1, IND2, IND3, INS1, INS2, NGA1, PER1, SRI1	IND2, IND3, IRQ3, RUS2, SRI4	ARG1, INS2, NGA1, PAK1
Other Cases	BNG1, BNG2, GUA1, LIB1, YAR2	YAR2	BNG1

### Table 2.3: Strategies and Cases by War Outcome

I hypothesize that these policy configurations represent 1) necessary conditions for durable stalemates and 2) policies that victors employ after suppressing rebel groups during the civil war. These strategies depend on three factors. First, the strategies depend on the <u>political independence of the government and the rebel groups</u>; there is no attempt to form a power-sharing agreement (powshar). In the stalemate cases, this means that the rebel leaderships remain in their stronghold, and the government makes no effort to come to terms with the rebels. In suppression cases, the lack of a power-sharing agreement

reflects that the rebel leaderships have refused to surrender and have gone underground-- or that their organization has been totally destroyed. Accordingly political "independence" of the combatants is a necessary condition for both stalemate and suppression.

Second, these strategies depend on the financial independence of the government, represented by the absence of aid dependence as a necessary condition (oda). The absence of aid dependence means at least two things: that post-war revenues are not obviously disadvantageous to the government, and that the international community has little leverage over the post-war government. This financial health makes a stalemate less threatening to the government -- a government whose finances are not threatened by the continuing existence of a rebel group is more likely to accept a stalemate outcome. In addition, the government can resist any international pressure to come to terms with the rebels, since the government does not rely on aid to finance its activities. These mechanisms operate in the suppression cases as well: the absence of aid dependence means ignore the political demands the government can of the suppressed rebel movement.

third component of a durable stalemate is The some assurance for the rebels that the government will not pursue them for the time being. This assurance manifests in one of the government lacks a large army (army), the three ways: government does not attempt to bring the rebels to justice government is an autocratic regime (pcj), or the with a demonstrated willingness to make hard decisions (dem\*SAP). This latter condition (dem\*SAP), I suggest, represents a credibilitybuilding step for the post-war government: if a post-war government is willing to signal a raft of major economic

-58-

reforms, any claims it makes to abide by a <u>de facto</u> ceasefire agreement are more credible.

The third component of these strategies is harder to interpret for the suppression cases. Policies that provide assurance to the rebels in the stalemate cases might, in the suppression cases, perhaps represent a willingness to use coercive force against political opposition. Post-war states with weak armies (army), post-war states that neglect post-war justice mechanisms (pcj), and post-war authoritarian states (dem) all generally pursue more coercive governing strategies their inverse. than Suppression may be а successful "peacebuilding" strategy because it signals a willingness to potential rebels that coercive war-time policies are still in place, thereby deterring renewed rebel activity.

Framed another way, the Qualitative Comparative Analysis provides insights into the nature of what are frequently termed "frozen conflicts" (e.g. Lynch 2004). Indeed, these configurations cover quintessential frozen conflicts in Nagorno-Karabakh, Abkhazia, South Ossetia, as well as numerous other Eurasian cases. The QCA has identified the essential ingredients for sustaining such stalemates as: the absence of power-sharing agreements and aid dependence, coupled with a weak army or the absence of post-war justice or authoritarian governance plus a structural adjustment program. One could fairly argue that these conditions are symptoms of, rather than causal inputs of, states with unresolved conflict. Yet the finding here are an advance on our understanding of such conflict, even if only by isolating the constitutive elements of a frozen conflict, identifying the entire subset of post-war episodes that reflect such dynamics, and demonstrating that post-war governments that have fully suppressed their rebel movements often have matching strategies.

-59-

### OTHER FINDINGS

**Democracy.** One intriguing result in Table 2.2 is the relative absence of democracy as a necessary condition to avoid war recurrence. In Configuration 9, democracy combines with substantial official development assistance for successful peacebuilding, but this path accounts for only a relatively small proportion of successful cases (7.8 percent). The episodes covered by the solution are post-war Burundi (2006-2011), Liberia (2003-2008), Nepal (2006-2011), Nicaragua (1990-1995), Sierra Leone (2001-2006), and Sri Lanka (1990-1995).

**Power Sharing.** Consistent with research by Barbara Walter and others following her, power-sharing agreements are quite important in distinguishing between successful and unsuccessful cases. The presence or absence of power sharing agreements is a necessary condition over half of all configurations that together explain over a majority of cases.

**Post-Conflict Justice.** The presence of post-conflict justice does not help explain peace in any policy configuration; its <u>absence</u> and is necessary in two strategies. The presence of post-conflict justice mechanisms, though quite prevalent among the cases, in inessential to avoiding a recurrence of war within five years.

**Security Personnel.** The presence of high numbers of military personnel is necessary in only two configurations, both of which require the absence of peacekeepers.

-60-

#### CONCLUSION

Maintaining peace after the end of civil war is a complex and challenging task for international and local peacebuilders. Since 1970, roughly one quarter of post-war episodes relapse into civil war between the same combatants, a number that rises to 40 percent if we include a return to lower-level conflict. Contrary to the expectations of the academic literature and the policy prescriptions invoked by the international community, peacebuilders should generally focus their efforts on the organization of the institutional and security architecture of the post-war society, rather than its democratic or economic features, to avoid a recurrence of fighting within five years.

There are four major strategies open to peacebuilders. The most familiar is the peacekeeping strategy, which combines a large number of peacekeepers with early elections. The second strategy focuses on local politics and patronage, which I hypothesize is effective because it funnels former fighters into local employment opportunities, especially into local political employment. A third strategy, a simple domination strategy, explains fewer cases and sits outside international norms and best practices, but is nonetheless important to understand to shape the strategic behavior of post-war governments that may find it appealing.

The last policy configuration explains not so much a "peacebuilding" strategy as the conditions necessary for a durable stalemate: first, the political independence of the government and rebel leadership; second, government finances that are secure enough such that a stalemate is not too threatening to the government, and third, an army too weak to threaten rebel groups or the absence of any attempt at post-war

-61-

justice <u>or</u> an authoritarian government that signs a structural adjustment policy. A democracy-centered strategy with significant external assistance-- with or without peacekeepers-is also viable but surprisingly uncommon. Post-conflict justice, non-democracy, and structural adjustment programs are, generally speaking, unnecessary ingredients for successful post-war strategies to avoid war recurrence within five years-- whatever else they may provide to a post-war society.

The policy relevance of my analysis is direct: I have identified the policies and configurations of policies that are associated with virtually every successful post-war episode since 1970, and have established the four general approaches that explain the vast majority of episodes successful at avoiding war recurrence. The analysis supplements and extends the lengthy quantitative civil war and peacekeeping literatures-- which tend to focus on individual correlates to peace and their independent effects on peace-- by instead assuming causal complexity and equifinality. It examined the causal recipes that emerge out of an analysis of all possible combinations of a 10policy recipe scored on 99 observations. Policymakers in Washington, New York, and elsewhere can use these findings to determine the optimal policy configurations for future post-war episode-- say, in Iraq, Ukraine, Syria, eastern DR Congo, or Colombia. The findings here allow policymakers to match the appropriate strategy to their desired ends.

The findings also indicate avenues for future research. Some researchers believe that quantitative, cross-national studies of civil war and peacekeeping have reached their limit-the further accumulation of knowledge in this subfield depending instead on micro-level research strategies. Bringing an alternative method to bear on the same data, this chapter identifies several areas for continued cross-national and cross-

-62-

conflict work-- namely, comparative analysis of the major strategies and their variants, and the <u>interactions</u> of the central pillars of post-war policymaking. Peacebuilding after civil war can be dramatically improved and rationalized with a more complete understanding of this fraught policy environment and the policy levers open to local and international policymakers.

Qualitative Comparative Analysis has been The use of steadily increasing since at least 2010 (Thiem and Dusa 2013). relatively uncommon in the discipline Yet it remains and unfamiliar to many social scientists. Its shortcomings have been examined by Achen (2005) and in a recent QMMR newsletter (2014). As a robustness check on the findings of the previous chapter, here I conduct a conventional multivariate regression analyzing essentially the same data, but using continuous and time-variant data where available. The analytical focus is again on the determinants of peace consolidation versus war relapse in postwar countries since 1970.

The most appropriate approach is a Cox proportional hazard model, which here estimates the risk of war relapse during a spell of peace. A Cox model is a type of event-history, survival, or duration model: it counts the time between events and associates these durations with covariates. In the present analysis, peace periods "fail" when they return to war: the duration of a peace period is the number of years from the last day of fighting to the next recurrence of fighting<sup>16</sup> (uncensored) or to December 31, 2014 (censored).

Much of the data are time-variant (i.e. it changes over time) so I transformed the cross-sectional dataset into timeseries format, including GDP per capita, GDP per capita growth, Polity IV scores, military personnel per capita, total population, proportion of GDP derived from oil and natural gas rents, the Political Terror Scale, the occurrence of national

 $<sup>^{\</sup>rm 16}$  Between the same actors, or, if the actors have evolved over time, at least over the same contested issue.

elections, and the duration since the last national election. Indicators for post-conflict justice, power-sharing governments, U.N. and other peacekeeping operations, DDR, military integration, military fragmentation, and decentralization are all essentially qualitative and time invariant. Some key data are not available for the entire post-war period in every episode, such as local elections. These data limitations were a primary motivation for attempting a QCA in the first instance.

Aside from differences in time-variance, there are three additional features to note. First, I updated the dataset with the newest UCDP-PRIO Armed Conflict Dataset (July 2015). Second, I reincorporated into the analysis variables from the post-war and peacebuilding literature, namely ethnic fractionalization scores, GDP per capita, GDP per capita growth, and total area. Third (not shown), I included other standard control variables, such as total population, region dummies, the proportion of youth in the population, and the proportion of mountainous terrain: of variables none these showed statistically significant correlations with peace duration, across many different model specifications. They were therefore dropped from the analysis. What is left are specifications that closely follow Collier, Hoeffler, and Söderbom's models of post-conflict risk (2008); this chapter can be seen as an update and refinement of that work.

With 44 out of 111 post-war episodes falling back into civil war, the average risk of relapse is 39.6 percent over the lifetime of a peace period. Figure 3.1 shows the estimated survival function for the core specification, which reveals the failure rate over the first 20 years, on the mean values of the covariates. The failure rate is much higher in the first five to seven years of the post-war period, at which point the curve

-65-

flattens. The dotted lines show the 95 percent confidence interval.

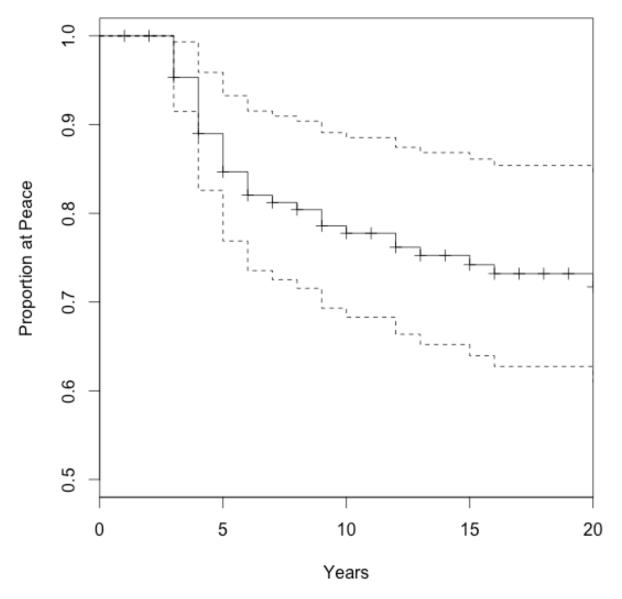


Figure 3.1: Conflict Risk

The core specification is given in Table 3.1, Column I, which closely follows the set memberships tested in the previous chapter. Subsequent columns show variations on that theme.

## Table 3.1: Cox Proportional Hazard Results

		D	Dependent Variable: Duration of Post-War Peace Periods					
Independent variables		1	11	111	IV	V	VI	
In GDP per capita		0.863	0.914		0.865	0.863	0.863	
	SE	0.169	0.198		0.168	0.170	0.170	
GDP per capita growth		0.964*	0.961*		0.959*	0.964*	0.964*	
	SE	0.020	0.002	0.000	0.023	0.020	0.197	
Oil and Natural Gas Rents	SE		0.996 0.014	0.988 0.012				
Democracy (time-variant dummy)		0.273**	0.284**	0.216***	0.268**	0.273**	0.275**	
	SE	0.552	0.588	0.545	0.553	0.554	0.558	
Autocracy (time-variant dummy)		0.396*	0.395*	0.345**	0.388**	0.397*	0.394*	
	SE	0.475	0.502	0.457	0.475	0.476	0.482	
Political Terror (time-variant dummy)		2.670**	2.634**	2.258***	2.584**	2.676**	2.660**	
	SE	0.390	0.413	0.368	0.390	0.393	0.390	
National Election (time-variant dummy)						1.024		
	SE					0.437		
Duration since Previous National Election							1.003	
	SE	0.005	0.74.6	0 744	0.000	0.007	0.375	
UN PKO (time-invariant dummy)	SE	0.885 0.664	0.716 0.700	0.741 0.633	0.938 0.675	0.887 0.666	0.875 0.685	
Other PKO (time-invariant dummy)	52	0.004	0.700	0.055	0.672	0.000	0.085	
	SE				0.072			
Army per capita		0.924	0.914*	0.913**	0.931	0.924	0.924	
	SE	0.050	0.054	0.044	0.517	0.503	0.504	
DDR (time-invariant dummy)		0.855	0.666	0.729	0.839	0.856	0.855	
· · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·	SE	0.508	0.623	0.471	0.505	0.508	0.508	
Military Integration (time-invariant dummy)			1.925					
	SE		0.610					
Decentralization (time-variant dummy)		0.600	0.523	0.483*	0.620	0.600	0.602	
	SE	0.417	0.460	0.420	0.420	0.417	0.418	
Post-War Powersharing (time-invariant dummy)	SE		1.113 0.589					
Post-War Justice Mechanisms (time-invariant dummy	SE		8.576 0.444					
Area		1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	1.000	
	SE	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	
Ethnic		0.516	0.487	0.727	0.544	0.515	0.514	
	SE	0.722	0.748	0.713	0.722	0.723	0.724	
Number of Failures		37	37	41	37	37	37	
Log likelihood		-140.520	-139.760	-161.516	-140.362	-140.519	-140.518	

Dependent Variable: Duration of Post-War Peace Periods

\* significant at the 10 percent level; \*\* significant at the 5 percent level; \*\*\* significant at the 1 percent level.

Note that Table 3.1 gives hazard ratios, rather than coefficient estimates. The ratios are interpretable relative to 1.0. If the ratio is greater than one, then the covariate increases the hazard rate multiplied by that amount, all else equal. Hazard ratios less than one indicate that a covariate reduces the hazard rate, holding everything else constant. For example, a ratio of 0.85 means that a one unit increase in the covariate decreases the hazard rate by 1 - 0.85 (or 15 percent). A 0.85 hazard ratio would translate (in our case) to a reduction in the overall risk of war relapse from 39.6 percent to 33.7 percent, ceteris paribus.

I tested the covariates for time-dependence in each model specification. If covariates have time-dependent effects-- that is, their effects on war relapse change as the peace period progresses-- then the hazards are not proportional and the Cox procedure will yield biased and inefficient estimates on all parameters (Box-Steffensmeier and Zorn 2001). No covariates showed evidence of time-dependent effects.

The findings are discussed by sector.

# ECONOMIC INFLUENCES

The results confirm a key finding of the quantitative civil post-war literatures: economic growth war and matters considerably. The effect of GDP per capita growth on the hazard rate is large and statistically significant. In Column I, the hazard ratio is 0.964, meaning that for every additional percentage point in annual economic growth, the risk drops 3.6 percent, holding everything else constant. This ratio implies that an additional 5 percentage points of annual growth per capita -- a feasible goal in many developing post-war countries -reduces the overall risk of war relapse from 39.6 percent to 32.5 percent. An additional 10 percentage points of growth per capita annually would reduce the overall risk from 39.6 percent percent, holding everything else constant. to 25.3 The significance and effect size of GDP per capita growth is robust in alternative models (Columns II, IV, V, VI).

-68-

Other measures of economic activity are not significantly associated with peace durations. Increases in GDP per capita and in oil and natural gas rents as a percentage of GDP are both associated with lower risk of war relapse, but not to а statistically significant degree. These results contradict central claims in the civil war and resource curse research (including, for example, Collier, Hoeffler, programs and Söderbom (2008)). Almost 10 additional years of economic and conflict data, as well as the inclusion of new and better data on military and political covariates, have perhaps washed out the statistical findings on GDP per capita and primary commodity exports.<sup>17</sup>

## **REGIME FEATURES AND INSTITUTIONAL ARCHITECTURES**

previous chapter Ι defined the In the post-war institutional architecture as the overarching framework of the post-war settlement: for example, whether there was a victory or negotiated settlement, whether peacekeeping troops were present, whether a power-sharing government was in place, or whether the country was politically decentralized. The CSQCA found significant relationships between such architectures and the ability of a society to avoid war relapse. The regression results generally confirm these findings.

Regime coherence dramatically lowers the risk of conflict relapse. I introduce dummy variables for democracy (scoring 5 or greater on the Polity IV measure) and autocracy (scoring -5 or less on the Polity IV measure); the missing dummy therefore represents anocracies: regimes with hybrid features.

 $<sup>^{\</sup>mbox{\tiny 17}}$  An initial next step is to replicate directly the models from the earlier studies, using updated data.

A democratic regime reduces the risk of post-conflict relapse by approximately 72.7 percent compared to anocracy. Democracy reduces the overall risk of relapse from 39.6 percent to 10.8 percent-- a truly massive risk mitigation effect, 20 times larger than adding an additional percentage point of economic growth per capita. An autocratic regime reduces the risk of relapse by approximately 60 percent compared to an anocracy, implying a reduction in overall risk from 39.6 percent to 15.8 percent. Evidently, democratic regimes perform better than autocratic regimes in post-war settings, but both perform far, far better than anocracies.

Why might the differences be so dramatic? Anocracies may perform so much worse as post-war regimes because institutional incoherence and institutional incapacity are closely linked. Hybrid regimes are considered incoherent because they are constituted by institutions that rely on differing sources of legitimacy-- say, a president-for-life operating alongside an elected parliament. Such regimes often struggle with internal competition, but without the established conflict-regulating apparatuses of mature regimes. Unrestrained internal competition could make it difficult to implement post-war policies decisively. As far as post-war peacebuilding is concerned, anocracies have perhaps the worst of both worlds: they lack the pacifying effects of both the popular legitimacy of mature democracies, and also the ability of mature autocracies to deter rebellion.

# POLITICAL TERROR

Another statistically significant regime characteristic is a government's use of political terror on its citizens, apart from civil war related death. I introduce a dummy variable for

-70-

whether a country scored four or five on the Political Terror Scale in a given year (Gibney, et al. 2015). A score of four indicates:

Civil and political rights violations have expanded to large numbers of the population. Murders, disappearances, and torture are a common part of life. In spite of its generality, on this level terror affects those who interest themselves in politics or ideas.

## While a score of five indicates:

Terror has expanded to the whole population. The leaders of these societies place no limits on the means or thoroughness with which they pursue personal or ideological goals.

The use of political terror essentially guarantees war relapse: it increases the risk by 2.67 times. Indeed, if the overall rate of relapse is 39.6 percent, the presence of political terror pushes the overall risk to just above 100 percent!

The csQCA findings from the previous chapter found exactly the same result. The set of post-war countries that adopt political terror as a governing strategy are a perfect subset of countries that relapse into civil war: the presence of political terror is a sufficient condition to explain war relapse. We can say with confidence that that political terror is a perfect predictor of whether a country will relapse into civil war.

### MILITARY INFLUENCES

The analysis finds that the size of the national military has a statistically significant, large, and negative effect on the risk of war relapse. For each additional security personnel per 1,000 residents, the hazard rate declines approximately 8.5 percent, ceteris paribus-- an effect size more than twice as large as a one percentage point increase in GDP per capita

-71-

growth annually. For the country in the dataset with the median population (Sri Lanka in 2002), an increase in one personnel per 1,000 residents is equivalent to raising the military by roughly 20,000 total personnel, or approximately 13 percent of Sri Lanka's total reported military personnel in 2002 (158,000). (Note that these numbers are counting support staff, sailors, airmen and women, the entire chain of command, and other personnel, not strictly front-line soldiers.)

Contrary to the findings in the last chapter, other military variables are not important to predicting a durable peace in post-war episodes. Surprisingly, the presence of UN peacekeepers or other peacekeepers in the initial post-war phase does not seem to influence peace duration. Yet as described in Chapter 5, it is well established that the Security Council sends peacekeepers to "hard cases"-- precisely the cases most likely to relapse. The null result is probably due to selection bias, for which the Cox regression cannot account.<sup>18</sup>

# POWER SHARING AND DECENTRALIZATION

In the previous chapter, I found the presence or absence of power-sharing governments to be a key factor sorting cases into success or failure categories. The regression analysis does not find any evidence of a relationship, but this result may be due to selection bias: power-sharing governments, like peacekeeping missions, occur in "hard cases." Typically actors must be forced by circumstances into power-sharing governments, which make such governments inherently less stable.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>18</sup> One follow up analysis could be to replicate a recent, high-quality peacekeeping article that uses matching, such as Gilligan and Sergenti (2008), with the new data.

Decentralization shows some evidence of association with a lower risk of war relapse. The hazard ratio almost reaches conventional significance thresholds in several specifications. In Model III, decentralization shows a large and statistically significant effect on lowering the risk of conflict relapse, reducing the hazard 52.7 percent, holding everything else constant, and moving the overall risk from 39.6 percent to 19.1 percent.

#### ELECTIONS

The multivariate analysis finds no evidence that elections matter. The presence of an election in a given post-war year has no statistically significant effect on the hazard rate, nor does the number of years since the last election. Unfortunately I cannot test for the independent effect of local elections, or of holding local elections first, because there is no crossnational time series data available for local elections, unlike national elections. (I was able to test local elections in the QCA using cross-national data from Brancati and Snyder (2013)).

#### OTHER FINDINGS

Ethnic diversity (measured by fractionalization) apparently has no influence on post-war hazard rates, all else equal. Addressing ethnic and communal tensions in post-war societies may be beneficial for other reasons, including normative ones, but such efforts should not substitute for policies that directly reduce the rate of conflict relapse. The analysis finds no evidence that post-conflict justice, DDR, or military integration reduces the risk of relapse.

-73-

# CONCLUSION

The quantitative results in this chapter indicate the usefulness of taking multiple approaches to the study of civil war, peacebuilding, and post-conflict risks. This first pass suggests that the results from the csQCA are generally robust: regime features, military size, and decentralization are evidently correlated with peace duration, while political terror as a governing strategy virtually guarantees civil war relapse. Post-war economic growth is highly correlated with longer spells of peace. Post-war justice, ethnic fractionalization, the size of a country, DDR, military integration, and national elections are not correlated with longer durations of peace after civil wars end.

# POST-WAR LIBYA: STALEMATES AND PEACEBUILDING AS SOURCES OF POLITICAL ORDER AND DISORDER

Libya after Qaddafi was originally thought to be fertile ground for a peaceful transition to democracy and the rule of law. Among the countries touched by the Arab Spring, Libyan society had comparatively high levels of education, wealth, and ethnic, linguistic, and religious homogeneity. It obviously had enormous oil wealth that could be used to smooth over political differences and fund the government. Yet the transitional government inherited deeply fragmented state institutions, many new political actors with little knowledge and deep skepticism of their peers, and a citizenry with no experience in majoritarian governance or the rule of law. The transition

The focus of this case study is a structural explanation for Libyan stability and apparent progress from 2011 to 2014, and for the breakdown of the transition in mid-2014. Though Libya adopted many of the best practices of the international peacebuilding consensus -- quickly restarting economic activity, holding early elections, democratizing its politics, developing post-conflict justice and reconciliation mechanisms-the explanation for stability is deeper: the main political and military factions were locked in a durable stalemate. The stalemate rested on four pillars: the territorial independence of the factions in defensible space, the free flow of revenues the government, a weak formed security sector, and a to situation of legal impunity for all actors. Each pillar was a necessary condition for the stalemate: remove any of them and at least one faction would have preferred fighting. In the event, the stalemate ended in 2014 because two pillars broke down.

-75-

First, the nationalist secular faction centered in Benghazi ceded its defensible space to jihadists, who then massively escalated its assassination and terror campaign against members With their backs against the wall, of that camp. the nationalist-secular faction returned to full scale armed combat. Second, the legal impunity of one faction became jeopardized by mid-2014. The national-secular camp won a lopsided victory in low-turnout parliamentary elections in June 2014. Their rivals-a motley coalition of Misratans, Brotherhood members, Salafis, and anti-Qaddafi revolutionaries -- perceived their loss as removing the last legal impediment to the imposition of an Egyptian-style military regime on Libya, staffed in large measure by Qaddafi-era holdovers. With the example of Egypt at the front of their minds, the Brotherhood members in particular found such an outcome threatening and unacceptable. As a result, they led an armed uprising against the new parliament even before it was seated. No amount of oil-related patronage could substitute for the (perceived) existential threats facing key actors in Benghazi and among the Brotherhood and their allies.

In mid-2014, Libya lapsed back into civil war for the first time since the death of Muammar el-Qaddafi in October 2011. In late 2013 and early 2014, the low-level insurgency near Benghazi rapidly escalated, with bombings and assassinations targeting hundreds of military and police officers, judges, lawyers, human rights and women's rights activists, and others. In May 2014, a coalition of official and quasi-official armed groups, led by former Qaddafi general-turned-dissident Khalifa Hifter, launched Operation Dignity, a campaign aimed at demobilizing the Islamist militias they blamed for the surge in killings. To the west, allies successfully pressured Hifter's the transitional parliament to schedule elections that it had refused to hold despite the expiration of its mandate in January. Those

-76-

elections were held in June amid very low turnout and ongoing skirmishes across the country. As it slowly became clear that the nationalist camp had trounced the Muslim Brotherhood affiliates in the elections, the Islamist's allies launched a putsch in Tripoli, called Libya Dawn. Led by revolutionary brigades from Misrata and Tripoli, Dawn forces drove their rivals from the capital. With the capital in hostile hands, the new parliament convened instead in Tobruk; the Dawn coalition declared its own government in August. The crisis escalated further when Egypt and the United Arab Emirates launched airstrikes against the Islamist-backed militias near Tripoli. Jihadist groups affiliated with al Qaeda and the Islamic State gained strength and territory in Benghazi, Derna, and Sirte during winter and spring 2015.

After 42 years of a corrupt and vicious dictatorship, eight months of civil war, and three years of fraught transition, Libyan society finds itself lurching from one political crisis to the next. Even if intensive negotiations led by the United Nations and diplomatic pressure from regional powers can stop the current fighting, Libya's immediate future looks grim: a fragmented state, disrupted oil exports, shrinking government revenues, local political monopolies, and moribund national politics. Yet when Qaddafi was killed in fall 2011, many observers believed that Libya would have a fairly easy transition. Relative to the other countries affected by the Arab Spring, Libyan society had comparatively high levels of education, broad affluence, and ethnic, linguistic, and religious homogeneity. Libya had enormous oil revenues that the government could use to smooth over political differences-revenues absent in Egypt, Tunisia, or Yemen. In addition, the various rebel groups had worked fairly well together during the war, the transitional government had drafted a well thought-out

-77-

plan to get the country operating again, and the Libyan people were politically activated and eager to transform their society along democratic lines.

This chapter offers an explanation for the uneasy peace from 2011 to 2014, and the changing conditions that led to the breakdown of the transition during 2014. Libya comprised a specific policy configuration discussed in Chapter 2. This configuration allowed a stalemate to endure. No political faction had the capacity to destroy its rivals; but neither did any faction view the stalemate as intolerable. There were multiple opportunities for Libya to tip back into civil war between 2011 and 2014. Bloody clashes were frequent, even endemic, but each time that Libya reached the precipice of renewed civil war, the factions deescalated the situation. Only in 2014-- after the underlying conditions favoring a stalemate had shifted-- did the contest escalate into full-scale armed conflict.

Post-war Libya has important, ongoing policy relevance for the international community for at least two reasons. First, some western strategists have touted the "Libya Model" as a simpler, cheaper, less risky, and less taxing intervention approach to the "Bosnia," "Kosovo," "Afghanistan," or "Iraq Models." The "Libya Model" uses western air and sea power and clandestine Special Forces operations to support local fighters-- followed by a post-war support mission limited to diplomatic, technical, training, and financial assistance. The "Libya Model" thus lacks two key components of conventional peacebuilding practice: a large troop deployment and an intensive civiladministrative, state-building effort. International actions in post-war Libya-- including the United Nations Support Mission in Libya (UNSMIL)-- are assistance missions whose roles are limited to advising, training, brokering, warning, exhorting, funding,

-78-

and otherwise supporting. In essence, international actors were attempting <u>peacebuilding without peacekeepers</u>. If, in the next few years, Libya successfully consolidates itself as a democratic country at peace with itself and its neighbors, western powers are more likely to adopt this strategic approach in future crises.

Second, the Libya case has policy relevance to the international community because a conflict-ridden or failed state on the Mediterranean Sea will become an ongoing threat to Europe, Africa, and the Middle East. Libya has already become a safe-haven for international terrorists, a source of large refugee outflows, and a source of significant instability in the global oil markets. Finding a viable path to political order in Libya is critical to Western security in the near term.

Beyond these policy consequences, post-war Libya has quite significant implications for theories of comparative political science and international relations because it has followed a relatively unusual post-war path that has not been well studied in the academic literatures. Rebel organizations rarely win civil wars when they are as organizationally and politically weak as the Libyan revolutionaries. The rebel groups lacked deep local legitimacy, a coherent political program, a strong discipline, or administratively internal an powerful organization. Instead of answering the basic questions about Libya's future, the fall of Qaddafi only added to them. Having won only with timely assistance from NATO and the Friends of Libya coalition, the victorious but weak rebels began their transition almost from scratch, without a large international mission to provide basic security or public services during the transition. Rebel state-building without international supervision is not unprecedented in recent history, but the closest historical comparisons are not promising: Chad (1990),

-79-

Ethiopia (1991), Somalia (1991), Uganda (1992), Rwanda (1994), DR Congo (2001), and Nepal (2006). In each of these countries, the end of the civil war coincided with a regime change, and the new rebel-led governments needed to reconstitute the state. Yet half succumbed to renewed war within five years, none are consolidated democracies, and all remain extremely poor.

Most of peacebuilding literature focuses on international policy interventions, rather than on local attempts to build peace in the absence of international supervision. Post-war Libya is therefore a good case to test many of the dominant findings: that third party enforcers are essential to the consolidation of peace after civil war; that internal security is the sine qua non of any post-war policy agenda; that early premature in countries inexperienced with elections are democracy; that natural resources are a political 'curse;' that consociational political institutions improve prospects for peace; and many others. That Libya, despite so many handicaps, has muddled through even three years without a recurrence of hostilities on the scale of the 2011 civil war is remarkable in itself, and it suggests that post-war countries can consolidate peace even in inhospitable settings and without international long as they adopt policy configurations supervision so appropriate to their context.

The case study has four parts: (1) a presentation of the policy environment in which victorious Libyan rebels found themselves in late 2011, (2) an explanation of key policy decisions made in the first three years of the post-war episode, with a particular focus on the incentives and capabilities of the most important actors, (3) a discussion of the changing strategic environment that led to the collapse of the transition during 2014, and (4) an analysis of the configuration of

-80-

policies that Libyan and international policymakers should adopt going forward.

#### PEACE AS STRATEGIC STALEMATE

Contemporary theories of civil war and civil peace do not seriously grapple with the subset of post-war cases that are essentially stalemates or frozen conflicts.<sup>19</sup> Most studies of civil war termination and recurrence (e.g. Walter (1997, 1999, 2004), Hartzell and Hoddie (2003, 2007), Hoddie and Hartzell (2005), Mattes and Savun (2009 2010), Fearon (2004))lump stalemate cases together with cases that have more definitive post-war settlements: for example, cases where the political incompatibility has been resolved through a battlefield victory, where a negotiated settlement is enforced, or where an international actor imposes a trusteeship.

Yet stalemate cases are clearly distinctive. In cases like Myanmar, or Kurdish Nagorno-Karabakh, Iran, major combat operations cease for a considerably long duration, but without the underlying political incompatibility being resolved. There are often no national institutions to manage the conflict, the actors remain mobilized for war, and fighting and low-level conflict periodically erupts. While all the key actors surely prefer a clear political or military victory, the actors are also willing to tolerate an uneasy peace for long periods of time. Prevailing theories of civil war termination and peacebuilding do a poor job explaining these stalemates. These episodes do not resemble our common notions of post-war reconstruction or political order, but rather they resemble the sort of strategic stalemate or balancing that existed between

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>19</sup> Furthermore, the insights from the relatively small scholarship on frozen conflicts have not been incorporated into the dominant theories of civil war and peacekeeping. The primary insight is the role of external actors in sustaining and manipulating local political cleavages (Cite).

the superpowers during the Cold War, or among the major European powers from 1815 to 1914.

Under what conditions does such a stalemated peace emerge after major civil war? Is stalemate explained by a roughly equal distribution of power across domestic political actors? Or can we isolate other conditions that buttress these stalemates after a civil war concludes?

The previous chapter proposed the following necessary conditions for a stalemate:

A) The political (territorial) independence of factions,

B) Secure government revenues,

And either:

- C) A weak national army, or
- D) No attempt to impose post-conflict justice on factions, or
- E) An authoritarian-reformist central government.

In Boolean notation, this configuration of conditions can be expressed as:

(1) stalemate = A\*B\*(C+D+E)

These configurations keep war from recurring in as much as 20 to 40 percent of all post-war cases since 1970. I argue that these conditions create a strategic environment in which no actor has the incentive or the capability to defect from the stalemate and attempt to revise this post-war "settlement."

Libya after Qaddafi is one such case. The experiences of post-war Libya are consistent with the theoretical claims made in the previous chapter: that institutional and military factors explain whether a post-war country can avoid a recurrence of civil war, rather than factors such as democratization, economic liberalization, reconciliation and post-conflict justice, or the expansion of women and minority representation. In fact, by almost all accounts, Libya made significant progress on peacebuilding policies from 2011 to 2014. The multi-track strategy adopted by Libyans -- with the crucial assistance of the United Nations Support Mission in Libya (UNSMIL) -- yielded impressive results, including many peacebuilding policies that (on paper) met or exceeded international best practices. Yet these efforts were not enough to end the political conflicts and establish new and functional state. The weakness and а fragmentation of Libya's political and security milieu precluded the implementation of most policies, the restoration of state control, and the normalization of social, economic, and life. The transition's political apparent progress was ultimately superficial since no progress was made on renovating Libya's institutional and military architectures.

This political and security fragmentation had two effects. First, it contributed to the stalemate and provided short-term stability because of a rough balance of power among the major factions. No faction was strong enough militarily to threaten their rivals' strongholds. Furthermore, because Libyan political identities and organizations revolve around local and tribal networks, the political appeal of actors from other regions of Libya was limited. As a result, the major factions felt relatively secure from political and military encroachment.

Second, the fragmentation meant that hard decisions about the demobilization of rival groups and about how to confront spoilers kept being put off. The unstable government's only option was to exhort or bribe the revolutionary brigades to demobilize or integrate with the armed forces. These policies were unsuccessful at bringing the armed groups to heel, and issues related to demobilization and counterterrorism policy accumulated over 2013 and 2014. The <u>modus vivendi</u> that held among the major armed factions broke down in the first half of

-84-

2014. It broke down for two reasons. First, radical groups in Benghazi accelerated their campaign of terror against mainstream nationalist groups and former establishment figures. Prior to this point, Benghazi was a comparatively safe area for centrist groups representing the local establishment and the nationalist current. When the going got tough in Tripoli, figures from transitional government or the National Forces Alliance could always retreat to Benghazi. But with Benghazi itself now under threat, the nationalist camp had its back against the wall, and was forced to strike back at the revolutionary brigades conducting the terrorism campaigns (mostly Ansar al-Sharia with tacit support from more mainstream Islamist revolutionary groups). The "territorial independence" of the nationalist camp in their Benghazi stronghold faltered, and this helped end the stalemate. The second factor that broke down the stalemated almost complete exclusion of transition was the Islamist politicians from the successor body to the General National Council. For the entire post-war episode, no faction and no military organization had a preponderance of legitimate power across Libya, let alone a monopoly. With Islamist's excluded from the new parliamentary body, there would be little legal impediment to Libyan nationalists adopting the violent anti-Brotherhood strategy that was unfolding in neighboring Egypt. Indeed, Hifter cited Egyptian president Fattah el-Sisi and his actions as his model. (Whether the new government or Operation Dignity would soon have the capacity to implement Egypt's strategy was another matter.) The election results would have allowed the parliament (dominated by nationalists) to impose itself, by law, on the Islamist coalition. The prospect of legal jeopardy, of subordination to the civil or military justice systems, was too dangerous to the Brotherhood affiliates or

their Misratan allies. Thus two necessary conditions for stalemate failed in 2014, and civil war renewed.

#### Power and Patrimonialism in Qaddafi's Libya

Libya's unstable and fragile transition was the direct outgrowth of Qaddafi's malign legacy, and the manner in which the 2011 civil war unfolded. Qaddafi intentionally kept his formal security sector weak and fragmented, protecting his regime instead with politically loyal paramilitary organizations and a ruthless secret police. Once the rebellion and NATO strikes destroyed these pillars of his regime, the remnants of the formal security sector -- especially the police and army-were incapable of establishing public order in the post-war environment. Neither were the victorious rebels able to provide adequate security. Indeed, the NATO intervention averted almost certain defeat for the rebels in March 2011, and NATO later shifted the ensuing stalemate in favor of the rebels in September and October 2011. The rebels toppled Qaddafi without developing coherent, nationwide political-military а organization, and the war ended before the various rebel groups had answered basic questions over command-and-control, their political program, or transitional governance. Despite the substantial advance work of the Benghazi-based National Transitional Council (NTC), the NTC entered Tripoli only as the most prominent of several competing rebel factions, rather than a true post-war government-in-waiting with the popular as legitimacy and administrative capacity to enact its program. Yet despite these handicaps, post-Qaddafi Libya did not experience a recurrence of major civil war until mid to late 2014, and only then arguably. This section and the next section explain the decrepit state of the security sector, which ultimately enabled the post-war stalemate.

-87-

#### SECURITY SECTOR FRAGMENTATION AND POLITICIZATION

Muammar Qaddafi was one of seventy junior officers and enlisted men who led the bloodless <u>coup d'état</u> of September 1969 that deposed the monarchy and established an Arab nationalist regime headed by a Revolutionary Command Committee. The RCC appointed a cabinet to run the ministries, promoted Qaddafi to colonel and commander-in-chief of the armed forces, and named him chairman of the RCC (Vandewalle 2012, 73, 81, 145). The ruling clique-- virtually all of them graduates of the military academy from the class of 1963-- immediately purged high-ranking military officers, and dramatically increased the number of personnel in the small, 7,000-soldier force, by recruiting new soldiers and merging regional militias into it (Vandewalle 2012, 73, 81, 145).

From the beginning, Qaddafi used the security sector as a political tool, and consequently the security sector provided neither security nor justice for most Libyans. In the early years of Qaddafi's regime, the country was governed directly by the armed forces: military men dominated the RCC, and the RCC directed the cabinet. Qaddafi adopted the confrontational and revolutionary rhetoric of Gemal Abdul Nasser, but the new regime pursued a relatively pragmatic foreign policy concerning its international oil contracts (Vandewalle 2012, 77-78). The U.K. and U.S. were, however, forced to evacuate air bases located in northern Libya.

Over time, political power shifted from the formal security sector to informal and paramilitary institutions. In response to internal and external threats in the mid-1970s, Qaddafi inserted political loyalists into the armed forces, police, and judiciary (Vandewalle 2012, 119). He also established extralegal political courts to suppress opposition (Vandewalle 2012, 121, 141). An

-88-

informal group of several-hundred regime loyalists cycled through the major security organizations, which were multiplied and given vague and overlapping remits to prevent any one agency from posing a threat to the regime (Vandewalle 2012, 148-150). Qaddafi also regularly purged the armed forces of perceived malcontents.

The official security sector and other elements of the formal state were kept weak. Appointments issued based on loyalty, rather than merit, and officials rotated quickly such that ambitious officers would not have the chance to build a power base (Vandewalle 2012, 145). Military funding decisions were made for domestic political reasons, rather than any assessment of security needs (Vandewalle 2012, 146). Family members, including Qaddafi's sons, ascended to the highest positions, with Qaddafi's tribe and other politically important tribes over-represented in the security sector leadership (Vandewalle 2012, 149).

While the relative importance of individual security institutions waxed and waned over time, Qaddafi's security remained fragmented, politicized, overall sector and unprofessional. As elsewhere in Qaddafi's state, the security sector was bifurcated into parallel structures: a set of regime-protecting, personalistic, powerful, but informal institutions alongside withered and relatively powerless formal institutions.

To maintain political legitimacy at home Qaddafi frequently sought to provoke his neighbors and western powers, positioning himself as a leading Arab nationalist, the champion of the Palestinian cause, and the nemesis of western imperialism. His rhetoric was not matched by battlefield successes. Egypt crushed Libyan tank formations and disabled the Libyan air force in a border skirmish in 1977. Libya deployed 3,000 troops to support

-89-

Idi Amin's invasion of Tanzania in 1978 and 1979, but they performed poorly and took heavy casualties. When the United States launched punitive airstrikes in 1986 against Tripoli and Benghazi, Libyan anti-aircraft defenses barely functioned, soldiers deserted their posts, and command-and-control broke Libyan military initiatives in Chad were down. thwarted throughout the 1980s by French and Chadian forces. Chadian units forcibly ejected the Libyan army in 1987 despite beina outnumbered and under supplied.

Oaddafi complemented these limited conventional capabilities with terrorism, offering safe haven and material resources for a variety of Arab left-wing and nationalist terrorist groups, and sponsoring deadly and often spectacular attacks in the 1970s and 1980s that pushed the regime to the fringes of the international system. Rather than giving Qaddafi the domestic and international legitimacy he craved, Libyan support of terrorism weakened the regime at home and marginalized it even among potentially sympathetic audiences like the Soviets or the Arab nationalists. 20 Qaddafi also or acquired WMD capabilities -- mostly chemical developed weapons, but also a rudimentary nuclear program-- that he renounced in late 2003.

# FORCE STRUCTURE AND ARMS ACQUISITIONS

The regime quickly recognized the political benefits of a large military, which it used to groom loyalists and distribute patronage. From 7,000 soldiers in 1969, manpower peaked at around 125,000 active and reserve personnel in the late 1980s and early 1990s (Cordesman 2005). The army constituted the bulk

-90-

 $<sup>^{</sup>m 20}$  See Vandewalle 2012, 99. Even the Russians and Chinese agreed with punitive UN sanctions in 1992 and 1993.

of this manpower, with 55,000 active-duty, professional soldiers at its peak. Just before the Arab Spring, force strength had declined to approximately 25,000 professional soldiers, with another 25,000 conscripts, and an estimated 40,000-person reserve force (*The Military Balance* 2011, 320-321).

The regime purchased weapons, at least in theory, to fight wars of maneuver in the desert. Using his massive oil revenues, Qaddafi purchased such vast quantities of tanks, artillery, and armored vehicles that Libya became "the world's largest military parking lot" (Cordesman 2005). Most of this weaponry quickly became useless: Libya never trained personnel to operate the equipment, nor budgeted for maintenance. Just before the civil war, Libya reported over 2,000 main battle tanks, 2,400 artillery pieces, and 2,000 mechanized infantry vehicles-- most of them obsolete and with perhaps half being serviceable (*The Military Balance* 2011, 320-321; Cordesman 2005).

Qaddafi's navy was also barely operational. By 2011, the navy owned two frigates and one submarine-- none deployable in combat-- and various smaller craft suited for coast guard missions (*The Military Balance* 2011, 320-321). In 2010, the navy and coast guard reported 8,000 personnel. By 2011, the air force had a variety of fixed-wing aircraft, including one bomber squadron, a single advanced fighter squadron of six planes, and many lesser quality fighter squadrons.

Qaddafi's air transport capabilities were adequate to police the tribes in Libya's vast southern deserts. The air force maintained 60 attack helicopters and several dozen transport helicopters, and the training of helicopter units was at a higher level (*The Military Balance* 2011, 320-321; Cordesman 2005). One of the regime's best successes was its strategic deployment capacity; Libya used transport aircraft to send troops to a number of African countries since the late 1970s,

-91-

even if those troops did not perform adequately upon their arrival.

Beginning in the mid 2000s, during his rapprochement with the west, Qaddafi began to modernize his forces with purchases of fighter aircraft, air defense systems, a submarine, main battle tanks, anti-tank missiles, and communications equipment from France and Russia (The Military Balance 2009, 237). These efforts included training from British Special Forces. The highest quality unit in the regime's armed forces was the 32<sup>nd</sup> Reinforced Brigade, known as the Khamis Brigade after its commander Khamis al-Qaddafi, son of the dictator. The Khamis Brigade was later crucial to the regime's efforts to suppress the rebellion, defend Tripoli, and isolate Misrata (Fahim 2011b). The Arab Spring cut short this belated attempt at force modernization.

## THE SECURITY AND JUSTICE SECTORS AS AN INSTRUMENT OF OPPRESSION

Early in his tenure, Qaddafi retained at least some popular legitimacy as an Arab nationalist and thorn in the side of western powers. He was also adept at funneling patronage through Libya's political and tribal systems. Yet as time wore on, Qaddafi's popularity waned and he became increasingly dependent on the brutality of his paramilitaries to maintain his political dominance. By the late 1980s and early 1990s-- at the height of Libya's international isolation-- the most important instrument of Qaddafi's political control was his internal security apparatus.

The justice sector, like the security sector, was bifurcated into a politicized regime-serving system, and a more typical criminal and civil systems. Most of the worst human

-92-

rights abuses occurred in the former, though neither half of the system provided adequate justice for the Libyan people.

Qaddafi established political courts in the 1970s. These courts resumed the death penalty for regime opponents, including coup plotters. Qaddafi's agents assassinated opponents at home and abroad (Amnesty 2010, 17-18, 30). The Internal Security Agency operated secret detention centers and prisons, and answered only to Qaddafi (Amnesty 2010, 30). At these sites, the regime conducted executions, extrajudicial killings, severe torture, 'disappearances,' and holding prisoners incommunicado (Amnesty 2010, 29-54). Even non-political crimes were punished harshly: judges regularly condemned adulterers (in practice, mainly women) to flogging, and punished thieves with amputation (Human Rights Watch 2006a).

Legislation prohibited any political, social, or economic activities outside state-sanctioned ones. The rights of association, speech, assembly, the press, information, privacy, or petition were non-existent. Any efforts to exercise these rights received harsh reprisals for virtually the entire Qaddafi-era. The consequence of these policies was that Libya has had essentially no independent civil society since the mid-1970s (Human Rights Watch 2006b, 1-4; Amnesty 2010, 10).

# Abu Salim Prison Massacre

During the twilight of Qaddafi's regime, one of the most important human rights controversies was the Abu Salim Prison massacre in 1996, in which a protest by prisoners led to the mass murder of some 1,200 detainees. For years afterward, the regime denied any deaths occurred and restricted all information coming out of the prison. The government did not officially recognize the event until 2004; families of the disappeared sought information from the Qaddafi regime with no success (Amnesty 2010, 67). Even now the victims have not been authoritatively identified. In 2008, the government began issuing death certificates and offering significant financial compensation, yet no explanation for the deaths was forthcoming (Human Rights Watch 2009, 5-6).

# Late Attempts at Legal Reforms

The years leading up to the civil war saw modest, but notable moves toward reform, centered on Saif al-Islam Qaddafi, Muammar Qaddafi's second-oldest son. The Gaddafi Development Foundation (GDF), for example, was allowed to criticize the regime, and served as a vehicle for Saif's political ambitions. The foundation did have some modest liberalizing successes: namely, publicizing human rights violations, facilitating the release of hundreds of political detainees, and organizing visits by Amnesty International and Human Rights Watch (Amnesty 2010, 20-21). Separately, Saif's al-Ghad corporation established the first two privately owned newspapers in decades, which did manage to be critical of the regime when they were not being harassed (Amnesty 2010, 21-22).

# IMPACT ON POST-WAR LIBYA

The legacies of the Qaddafi era are unfavorable terrain for the quick or easy emergence of security and justice sectors that are transparent, accountable, effective, and responsive to the needs of the public. None of the personnel available to the new government has any experience participating in a human-rightscentered security sector in which the uniformed forces submit to civilian authorities. Key oversight bureaucracies-- the Ministries of Defense and Interior in particular-- are being built from scratch on external models, and will lack the local familiarity and support that organically- and historically-

-94-

derived institutions enjoy. Libyan security personnel-- new and old-- have no experience 1) conducting long-term planning, 2) recruiting or promoting based on merit, 3) accounting for key public stakeholder preferences, or 4) keeping transparent financial accounts. Finally, there seems to be little in the way of a culture of tolerance or human rights at any level of society and state. In short, Libya's experience under Qaddafi suggests the country was most likely to replace one authoritarian security sector with another.

# THE CIVIL WAR

The Libyan civil war is notable for how quickly the entire days after protests finally drove process unfolded. Four President Hosni Mubarak from power in neighboring Egypt, small groups held demonstrations and sit-ins in Benghazi on Wednesday, 16 February. These protesters objected to the detention of a human rights lawyer and demanded justice for mass killings in 1996 and 2006. Separately, youth organizers inspired by events in Cairo's Tahrir Square used social media to organize a large Thursday, 17 February. protest in Benghazi on Qaddafi miscalculated and attempted to suppress the gathering with massive violence in Benghazi. His regime's response escalated the situation and precipitated even larger protests in Benghazi on Friday, and new protests in Misrata and Tripoli over the weekend. On Monday, Tripoli witnessed widespread violence: rioting, bombings, the burning of government buildings, and the regime's deployment of heavy weapons and helicopters in denselypopulated areas within the city limits (Agence France Presse 2011a). Unlike in neighboring Egypt, where the protesters were largely peaceful, and the security forces operated with some discretion, it was clear after only a few days that Libya was engulfed in a true popular revolt, with all actors adopting strategies of violence.

# **REGIME FRAGMENTATION**

The popular uprisings triggered a rapid fragmentation of the state apparatus. Security forces in eastern Libya deserted their posts and, depending on their allegiances, either retreated west toward Tripoli or pledged support to the demonstrators and opened their arsenals to them. On 21 February,

-96-

the Justice Minister, Mustafa Abdul Jalil, resigned in protest of the mass violence and was joined by several diplomats stationed abroad. Two fighter pilots, both colonels, flew to Malta and defected rather than follow orders to fire on unarmed protesters. The following day, Interior Minister Abdul Fatah Younis resigned and called for a military coup d'état. By the end of this first week, loyalist forces had abandoned all of eastern Libya, and Benghazi was securely in the hands of opposition protesters (Agence France Presse 2011b). Misrata, Libya's third city, was in open revolt and under sustained attack from Qaddafi forces positioned outside the city limits. Even in western Libya, much nearer to Qaddafi's seat of power and his tribal homeland, protesters had driven security forces from the important towns of Zawiya and Zaroua. Though fast moving, the conflict was also intense: fatalities had already climbed well above one thousand in little more than a week, and opposition groups were gathering military equipment for protracted warfare (Agence France Presse 2011b). Even the international community moved with unusual alacrity-- the United Nations Security Council unanimously condemned the regime's crackdown on 22 February 2011; on 26 February 2011 the Council imposed an arms embargo, banned travel by regime leaders, and froze regime assets through UNSC Resolution 1970.

The combat in this first week was sharpest where the regime calculated it needed to stand and fight: Tripoli, Misrata, and oil assets in the west, including the town of Zawiya. Zawiya was both the closest town to Tripoli to rise up, and the site of Libya's largest oil refinery. Over the second week of the revolt, Qaddafi's regime regained its footing and reversed some territorial losses using all tools of coercion and patronage available to it.

-97-

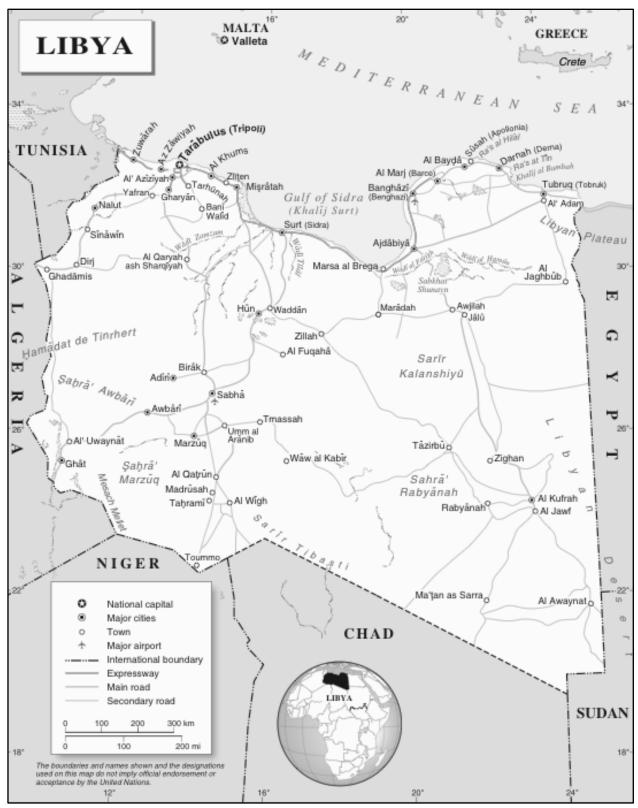


Figure 4.2: Map of Libya (Source: United Nations)

The loyalists' first action was to secure Tripoli. Turning whole neighborhoods into "free fire zones" successfully drove the protesters from the streets (Agence France Presse 2011a). (For the duration of the conflict, rebel organizations in Tripoli operated underground.) The regime then ringed Tripoli with checkpoints and roadblocks by 25 February; its most loyal and capable units, including the elite brigade led by Qaddafi's son Khamis, protected the western approaches to the capital (Fletcher 2011). The town of Zlitan and Qaddafi's tribal homeland around Bani Walid remained loyal, which meant that by the end of the second week, regime security forces controlled a stronghold roughly 100 by 75 miles, including the capital, several revenue-producing oil facilities, the country's main air and sea ports, and massive amounts of artillery, armor, vehicles, and ordinance that Qaddafi had stored in the west for precisely this contingency. The regime also controlled the cities of Sirte and Sabha, and a modest number of serviceable warplanes and helicopters.

In addition to these maneuvers, the government took a series of public and private steps to secure its position. The regime used cash payments to fortify the loyalty of citizens still under its control in the west. On 27 February, national banks began issuing cash and mobile phone credits to Libyan families, with promises of more (Michael 2011). The regime undoubtedly (if clandestinely) purchased the loyalty of tribal figures, military officers, and other notables with cash payments. Qaddafi and his son Saif al Islam made efforts to delegitimize the protest movement, and appeared on television and radio broadcasts linking the protests to al Qaeda, then claiming that the protesters were drug- and alcohol-addled youths. (Whatever minimal effect these claims may have had on local public opinion, they opened up the regime up to

-99-

international ridicule.) Lastly, in these early weeks the regime enforced discipline on its closest ranks by executing scores of high-ranking officers for their unwillingness to follow orders that would have led to mass civilian casualties-- a fact only revealed in interviews after the war (Worth 2011).

# FROM POPULAR UPRISING TO REBEL MOVEMENT

With its stronghold secured by the end of February, the regime prepared for a general counterattack. Now the popular uprising revealed some fundamental and, in the event, almost fatal weaknesses. First, despite a few high-profile defections and army mutinies in the east, the uprisings' military capabilities were almost non-existent. In the east, the popular uprising and the withdrawal of most security forces westward caused "citizen militias" to self-mobilize and provide basic public order. These militias armed themselves with weapons at hand, patrolled their neighborhoods and villages, and celebrated the developments. These casual revolutionaries allied themselves with defecting army units, but the army units lacked the organizational infrastructure and time necessary to absorb the militias, train them, and establish any command and control. Furthermore, the uprising in the east faced a shortage of modern weapons, especially heavy weapons, and were poorly trained, since Qaddafi had a deliberate, longstanding policy of holding back resources, quality personnel, and training from his regular army units stationed in the east for precisely this reason-- to undermine easterners' ability to organize themselves, if a revolt did come, into an armed opposition that could resist the more loyal and better-equipped paramilitary forces stationed in the west. Throughout the war, rebels from the east maneuvered

-100-

chiefly with converted pick-up trucks or personal automobiles, and used no airpower of their own.

A second rebel weakness was a lack of any credible, legitimate leadership that could step into the political vacuum created by the popular uprising. While most popular uprisings struggle to find leaders and organize themselves, this problem was heightened in Libya by the idiosyncratic political and social life imposed on society by Qaddafi since the 1970s. Libyan society lacked even weak or partially independent social institutions that could step into the breach: Libya had no political parties, regional or local governments, trade unions, independent legislators or judges, independent or robust civil society groups, or even religious or traditional organizations (Vandewalle 2012). The Muslim Brotherhood was a virtual shadow of its counterpart in Egypt. The only social organizations that could draw on independent sources of legitimacy, and were therefore the most likely to provide a focal point for organized political opposition, were Libya's tribes. Yet this traditional system had been effectively subverted by 40 years of skillful, highly personalistic, patronage-based rule. Over the course of the conflict, the tribal organizations did not coalesce into political opposition, except among the eastern tribes around Benghazi. As organizations, the major tribes in Libya's central, western, and southern regions either split into loyalist and rebel camps, or remained studiously neutral throughout most of the war. Thus the rebels in the east had few leadership figures or organizational resources to draw on as thev began constituting a shadow government and military command in Benghazi in late February and early March. Communicating with, let alone coordinating or organizing with, potential rebel leaders in Misrata and further west was essentially impossible.

With no other path forward, organizing for rebellion in the east began from scratch and from the ground up. Nine days after the initial protests began, a collection of individual lawyers and human rights advocates formed a committee in Benghazi, and announced the formation of a city council to administer the city (Agence France Presse 2011c). Other eastern cities quickly followed Benghazi's lead and formed their own revolutionary councils. With crucial guidance from high-ranking defectors, these municipal committees formed the National Transitional Council on 27 February (Schemm 2011). The NTC announced its 33member legislative body on 5 March and its executive cabinet on 23 March-- over a month after the start of the uprising.

Throughout the war, but especially at its beginning, the NTC struggled to establish political legitimacy and administrative control over the rebel movement and liberated territories. Initially, the Council's membership was largely eastern in origin; some representatives were appointed from cities and towns that had rebelled in the west and center of Libya but, for reasons of safety, the NTC did not reveal their names. Regime-held territories were not represented at all, with the Council instead "eagerly awaiting" these delegations when battlefield circumstances permitted ("NTC Statement on Membership," 2011). Furthermore, many Libyans felt the leadership of the Council was politically suspect. The designated chairman of the NTC was the former justice minister Mustafa Abdul Jalil, while its chief executive was the former high-ranking economic official Mahmoud Jibril-а former confidant of Saif al-Islam Qaddafi. The leadership's previous allegiances to the regime left the Council open to the charge that it did not represent, nor would implement, revolutionary change. At this early phase, however, the greatest deficit was time: neither the new Council nor the revolutionary brigades had

-102-

time to prove their loyalty or competence in battle, or to establish any popular legitimacy through elections, or to transform the popular protests into a true rebel movement.

The NTC had barely announced itself when Qaddafi loyalists began their general counterattack eastward, recapturing coastal towns almost as fast as it had lost them. The regime used combined arms and paramilitary forces with great effect: Bin Jawaad fell on 6 March; Ras Lanuf was captured after a coordinated attack from air, land, and sea by 10 March. Zawiya, in the west, fell on 11 March; Brega, a major oil city, was retaken on 13 March. Also on 13 March the Khamis Brigade besieged Misrata, thereby protecting the supply lines of Qaddafi forces farther east. By the afternoon of 17 March, regime loyalists had arrived 90 miles west of Benghazi, having pushed the rebels over 500 miles along the seaside highway in only ten days.

If their brush with defeat had galvanized Qaddafi's forces, the rebels reacted to their setbacks with ever-greater disorder. The rebels in the east appointed former Interior Minister Abdel Fattah Younis as their overall commander, but when Qaddafi's vanguard began infiltrating Benghazi on 18 and 19 March, the uprising was on the verge of collapse.

# ENTER NATO AND THE LIBYA CONTACT GROUP

The lack of a politically and militarily viable organization would have almost certainly proven fatal to the rebellion had not the United States, Britain, France, and other coalition members begun a military intervention just as Qaddafi's forces reached Benghazi. The diplomatic origin of the intervention was somewhat novel, and had important implications for the post war environment. The Obama administration pursued a

-103-

cautious strategy during the Arab Spring reflecting competing U.S. interests, the regional security context, and the political and diplomatic legacy of the Iraq War (see Chivvis (2013) for a detailed discussion of the political and diplomatic history of the conflict). Generally sympathetic to the protester's goals of democratization and reform, the Administration was quite wary of taking steps that might precipitate instability and violence at the heart of the Arab world-- results that might unravel the complex tapestry of security agreements in the region. U.S. signaling, public diplomacy, and private assurances played a critical role in coaxing actors into a relatively peaceful transition in Eqypt in January and February 2011. Such a 'soft touch' approach was infeasible in Libya for a variety of reasons, not least because the situation became so violent so quickly. At the same time, the Administration resisted early calls for military intervention from familiar corners of the Washington security establishment.

Instead the Administration pursued a strategy they later described (perhaps inartfully) as "leading from behind:" the United States would provide support to European and Arab efforts to end the violence in Libya, but would not itself lead the process. The Administration told its European and Arab allies to build a case against Qaddafi and recruit a coalition for any intervention.

Qaddafi's rhetoric became increasingly bloodthirsty as his forces reached Benghazi in mid-March (c.f. (Kuperman 2013)). By then, Qaddafi's forces had already deliberately targeted and killed hundreds if not thousands of non-combatant civilians, but the perception that he would massacre thousands of civilians in Benghazi provided the final, key rationale for a UN-sanctioned intervention. The Arab League formally requested a no-fly zone on 12 March. On 17 March, the Security Council adopted

-104-

Resolution 1973, which imposed a no fly zone but crucially included a very strong "Responsibility-to-Protect" component. The resolution authorized member states to use "all means necessary" short of military occupation in order to prevent the mass killing of civilians-- not just in and around Benghazi, but anywhere in Libya (UNSC Res. 1973). The resolution passed over the abstentions of Russia, China, Germany, India, and Brazil. In retrospect, Russia and China clearly misjudged the implications of the RTP clause, and likely would have vetoed the resolution had they anticipated the war to follow.<sup>21</sup>

The western powers interpreted the RTP mandate expansively. Less than 48 hours after the resolution passed, US, British, and French air and sea forces launched massive strikes against Qaddafi's air defense systems and air bases, and attacked his ground forces positioned outside Benghazi. Over the next six days, allied warplanes and warships totally destroyed Qaddafi's air defense systems, and his forces were thrown back from Benghazi. Over the next two weeks, the coalition struck over 1,000 targets.

The successful implementation of the no-fly zone and the apparent prevention of a massacre in Benghazi did not, however, signal the end of the air assault. Instead, during the last week of March, the coalition shifted its targeting to the regime's ground forces, using some of its most formidable ground attack weapons: A-10 Warthogs, AC-130 gunships, Brimstone precision anti-armor missiles, and UAVs armed with Hellfire missiles. Qaddafi's personal headquarters outside Tripoli and other command and control infrastructure were struck repeatedly, as was the headquarters of the Khamis brigade. Despite claims that

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>21</sup> On 21 March, Prime Minister Vladimir Putin harshly criticized the U.N. resolution, "The resolution is defective and flawed. It allows everything. It resembles medieval calls for crusades." (Bryanski 2011)

the overthrow of Qaddafi was not the coalition's aim, U.S. aircraft broadcast messages urging regime forces to defect, and the U.S. collected signals intelligence that it shared clandestinely with rebel forces (Schmitt 2011). Russia and China objected strenuously to what they perceived as overstepping of the UN mandate in Resolution 1973.

The diplomatic process culminating with the intervention occurred with such speed that important details were negotiated only after the strikes had begun, such as to whom the U.S. would cede operational control once the opening phase of the bombing was complete. (The U.S. was the only actor capable of disabling Qaddafi's air defenses.) France, Turkey, Germany, Qatar, and the U.A.E. each objected, for different reasons, to turning over the mission to NATO command. In the end, NATO and the Libya Contact Group (also known as the Friends of Libya coalition) jointly provided the political and military framework for the intervention.

# BATTLEFIELD STALEMATE AND POST-WAR PLANNING

After the initial strikes drove Qaddafi's forces back from Benghazi, fighting on the ground stalemated through April and into May. Coastal cities and towns in central Libya changed hands repeatedly, as no side could defend or govern territory adequately. A ceasefire was forestalled since neither was willing to compromise on their key terms: the rebels insisted that Colonel Qaddafi exit power, while his regime insisted Qaddafi stay.

The NTC used the battlefield stalemate to strengthen their organizational capacity, husband resources, and establish a political program. The NTC effectively coordinated with the international coalition supporting it, winning diplomatic

-106-

recognition from Qatar, France, and Italy. A series of international conferences pledged both harsher measures against Qaddafi's ruling clique and ever-greater financial support to the shadow government. The NTC expanded its membership to from territories not under their include notables direct control. The latter half of April saw the first foreign weapons reach the rebel forces, and news media reported clandestine military training in eastern Libya. In late April, Britain, Italy, and France announced they would send advisors to the rebels. Finally, the Libyan opposition announced a transitional political program at a 6 May conference in Rome (Bone 2011). This included a unity government roadmap made up of representatives from the NTC, Qaddafi's inner circle, and the military, police, and courts. This unity government would draft a constitution leading to elections. A post-war planning process convened in Qatar, which was designed to produce more detailed white papers.

At the end of May and through June, the coalition dramatically increased military and diplomatic pressure on Qaddafi. Diplomatic discussions at the G-8 meeting in Deauville, France, prompted Russia, South Africa, and the African Union each to make separate initiatives to find a negotiated solution; these initiatives again failed because Qaddafi refused to cede power. Coalition forces then increased the tempo of their airstrikes, and used attack helicopters for the first time. The U.S., Britain, and Australia recognized the rebel government on 10 June, and the Libya Contact Group pledged \$1 billion in support to the NTC. Finally, the International Criminal Court indicted Colonel Qaddafi, Saif al Islam, and Abdullah Senussi on charges of war crimes and crimes against humanity. By the end of June it became increasingly difficult to envision a negotiated ceasefire in which the personal freedom and wellbeing of

-107-

Qaddafi's inner circle could be credibly ensured; the likelihood of a military conclusion to the war correspondingly increased.

In early June a team of experts arrived in Benghazi to advise the National Transitional Council on post-war planning (Stringer 2011). This effort included working through a variety of scenarios with the Council's leadership, and developing a timetable for resuming oil exports, which was considered feasible as early as one month after the dictator left office. Notably, the plans ruled out a "large footprint" international peacekeeping mission -- scenarios were limited to humanitarian mission, or to a small, unarmed observer mission (ISRT 2011). The UN then drafted its own planning document (Martin 2011). Post-war planning efforts were explicitly intended to "learn the lesson of Iraq:" plans are drawn up for teams to enter Tripoli and secure the ministries and other government facilities, to prevent widespread looting and public disorder, to secure weapons stockpiles, and to retain, rather than demobilize, Qaddafi's security forces.

# NATO TIPS THE BALANCE TOWARD THE REBELS

This upturn in military and diplomatic pressure got results by the end of June. Rebels in the western mountains consolidated their holdings and, on 25 June, cut a pipeline to the Zawiya refinery. Rebels also cut supply routes from Tunisia to Tripoli, and prices in the capital increased as gasoline supplies ran short (Kirkpatrick 2011).

In July, rebel forces moved methodically closer to Tripoli, despite clear indications that these forces had yet to solve difficult problems of communications, logistics, discipline, and governance in their own areas of control, let alone jointly across the non-contiguous, rebel-controlled territories. Rebel

-108-

infantry complained that they still lacked basic weapons and supplies, suggesting that rebel commanders were hoarding materiel delivered by France and Qatar (Chivers 2011). The rebels did not perform well in combat. Where rebels engaged with regime loyalists in direct combat, such as in Zlitan in July, results were frequently inconclusive even with substantial NATO air support (Lamloum 2011). Five months into the war, the popular militias still lacked even minimally trained officers. The balance was tipping to the rebels, but not because of any comparative advantage in cohesion, power, or internal organization. They were winning because they had cut off Qaddafi's supplies and encircled his stronghold, which was only possible with NATO assistance.

This combination of dependence on NATO and basic governance problems was never clearer than at the end of July, when forces nominally under his command assassinated the most competent rebel military commander, Abdel Fattah Younis. Younis was the field commander for eastern Libya, as well as the NTC's chosen post-war defense minister; he was killed alongside two other senior commanders in Benghazi on 23 July. Later evidence indicated that Benghazi-based Islamists conducted these assassinations in revenge for Younis' role in violently suppressing Islamist resistance groups during the 1990s and 2000s (Kirkpatrick 2012). If their aim was also to weaken the hand of Benghazi-based secularists and the NTC at the moment of their success, the assassins succeeded spectacularly.

The killings threw the NTC into disarray. The "February 17 Convention" called for the resignation of the top officials, while some leaders scrambled to establish a judicial process to investigate the killings. On 9 August, Mahmoud Jibril dissolved the NTC executive committee in response to the assassinations, and the NTC essentially ceased operating as a body for days or

-109-

weeks afterwards (Hider et al. 2011). Several ministers continued performing their duties on an interim basis. Virtually simultaneously, and again with NATO air support, independent rebel groups in western Libya began their final maneuvers toward Tripoli, capturing three towns to the south of the city and fighting for control of three more. As independent revolutionary brigades approached Tripoli, western diplomats warned of "catastrophic success"-- the unraveling of the Libyan state without any political leadership to step into the vacuum (Hider et al. 2011). These issues were unresolved when Qaddafi's forces unexpectedly withdrew from the capital, and rebels from western Libya, together with the rebel underground in Tripoli, jointly seized control of the city on 21 August.

#### REBELS CONTEST CONTROL OF TRIPOLI

Resistance in Tripoli collapsed during the final ten days of August, under the combined pressure of an uprising in the city and the advance of rebels from the Zintan region and the Nafusah mountains, with Misratan brigades not far behind. The various rebel groups had coordinated their final assault, under although these groups were not the same command structures. The rebels advanced methodically though the city and the immediate environs from 20 August to 28 August. The dictator, his immediate entourage, and some remaining forces evacuated the city and went into hiding in Libya's vast interior. The rest of the loyalist forces self-demobilized. The mood in the streets was jubilant and largely peaceful.

As coalition strikes continued elsewhere, and rebel forces hunted down regime holdouts and searched for Qaddafi himself, Tripoli avoided the social disruptions, crime waves, and unrestrained looting that characterized the fall of Baghdad to

-110-

U.S. forces in 2003. Neighborhoods quickly organized their own security with local patrols and checkpoints. The revolutionary brigades from Zintan, Misrata, and Tripoli took up strategic positions around the capital. These groups began marking their territories with graffiti, like urban gangs (Fahim 2011a). The NTC immediately sent a respected minister to try to coordinate the armed groups; he convened a security council to coordinate these independent rebel forces. Following the contingency plans devised in Qatar and Benghazi, the NTC requested that the city police return to duty. Only the traffic police did so; most regular police officers reportedly feared retribution from the brigades and neighborhood militias that controlled the streets.

Control of Tripoli was thus fragmented and politically contested even before the end of the war. The NTC's post-war planning tacitly envisioned a negotiated ceasefire with the regime's security forces remaining at least partially intact, or that forces under the direct command of the NTC would take control of the city (ISRT 2011; Martin 2011). The planning also anticipated the rapid deployment of expert teams from Benghazi to Tripoli to take control of the ministries, prevent the destruction of government property, recall the ministerial staff, and get the day-to-day administration operational as rapidly as possible (Coghlan 2011); the explicit emphasis was to learn the lessons of the Iraq War and occupation. The contingency that the NTC did not anticipate was that Tripoli would fall into multiple, rivalrous rebel hands. As a result, the plans were largely abandoned for ad hoc decision-making.

There were no well-organized security forces to assume control of the city from revolutionaries from outside Tripoli or from the neighborhood militias. First, no Tripoli-based revolutionary brigades existed akin to the well-organized and well-led brigades from Zintan, Benghazi, or Misrata: Tripoli's

-111-

rebels operated underground throughout the entire conflict, were not battle-tested, and had not developed deep linkages to the constituencies on whose behalf they fought. Second, NATO ground forces would not deploy following the air campaign, as they had in Kosovo or Bosnia. Third, Qaddafi's 'official' security forces in Tripoli had demobilized. With no forces to displace them, the revolutionary brigades from outside Tripoli quickly calculated that holding pieces of the capital would give them leverage over the trajectory of post-war political developments. Their interests lay in the capital.

More generally, other conditions militated against a withdrawal of the non-Tripoli forces: No actor could credibly promise that the interests of the provinces would be respected if provincially-based forces withdrew-- the NTC was too new, too politically suspect, and too weak to make any such promises credible-- and no brigade wanted to be the "sucker" that left first, only to have their erstwhile allies take full control of the capital. In late 2011, no one could break the prisoners' dilemma over public order that quickly enveloped Tripoli.

## QADDAFI KILLED AND THE NTC ENTERS TRIPOLI

Despite the lack of operational unity among rebel forces, Tripoli immediately after Qaddafi's fall was relatively secure: there was no looting, riots, or mass violence. Traffic police returned to duty in many parts of the city, but regular police did not answer calls to take up their posts, apparently fearing retribution from the rebels. The revolutionary brigades and neighborhood militias ended up patrolling the neighborhoods. The various rebel groups each seemed to calculate that controlling a segment of the capital gave them leverage in the post-war political process. Without a unified rebel command or loyalists

-112-

in control of most of Tripoli, the NTC did not officially relocate to Tripoli until 31 October. The transition planning called for the deployment of 70 or so personnel to Tripoli to take control of the ministries and restart public services: there is no evidence that this plan was implemented (Coghlan 2011). Control of government facilities devolved to militias who arrived there first: most notably, militias from Zintan took control of the airport, and Misrata militias seized the seaside homes of high-ranking Qaddafi officials. (Both locations would be recurrent flashpoints through 2014.) Until the last Qaddafi stronghold fell, and the dictator himself was killed or captured, the NTC leadership feared leaving the relative safety of Benghazi.

Qaddafi and his immediate entourage eluded capture until late October. Misratan revolutionary brigades took the lead in pounding the loyalist cities Bani Walid and Sirte, where the dictator was suspected of hiding. As the noose tightened on Sirte, a U.S. Predator drone struck a large convoy carrying Qaddafi as he attempted to flee. The convoy halted, and the dictator and a few others fled on foot. Nearby rebel soldiers captured and killed them. Three days later, on 23 October 2011, the NTC declared Libya liberated, starting the clock on the post-war timeline established in mid-summer.

-113-

#### POLICY CONFIGURATIONS IN POST-WAR LIBYA

The post-war phase began with several common peacebuilding policies taken off the table. There would be no international, complex peacekeeping operation; 'pacted' transition, no negotiated ceasefire, or official power-sharing agreement; the official security forces could not provide internal security the political transition unfolded. The local while and international contexts were also relatively fixed but considered favorable to a successful transition: Libya's human development levels are quite high compared to most civil war cases since 1945; the society is ethnically and religiously homogenous (though tribally and regionally fragmented); European and Arab countries supported the new government and stood ready to assist; and no neighboring power sought to undermine the transition actively. The government had few spending constraints once oil exports resumed.

The organizational and administrative weaknesses of the NTC and the political fragmentation of the country and the capital meant that the post-war government operated with relatively few degrees of freedom. No single rebel faction could claim a nationwide mandate to govern in late 2011. As a result, two other peacebuilding policies were essentially predetermined. First, early national elections were probably inevitable, though not the exact timing, electoral rules, or sequencing of national and local polls. Second, post-war governance would proceed with an informal power-sharing approach, even if elections resulted in a large parliamentary majority for any one political faction. Whatever the outcome of the election, the country would be dominated by multiple armed groups that would not simply demobilize themselves or disinterestedly follow orders emanating

-114-

from the post-war government. Given the administrative and military weakness of the state, these armed groups would have to be <u>coopted</u> into the governing coalition, even if their public support was minimal. (In the end, early elections did not produce a mandate for any one political grouping.) This informal power-sharing arrangement would necessarily proceed on consensus.

In this context, post-war policy makers attempted a multitrack strategy. The government established basic frameworks for post-conflict justice mechanisms, demobilization and reintegration of combatants, new security ministries, a reorganization of the oil and finance sectors, and negotiations over political decentralization and a new constitution. Table 4.1 gives the post-war 'policy recipe' that Libya comprises, and which was used in the csQCA in the previous chapter.

Table 4.1: Selected Peacebuilding Policies in Libya

PKO	Presence of more than 1,000 peacekeeping troops	0
DEM	Governing using a democratic regime by year five	0
EARLY	Holding any nationwide election within 2.5 years	1
POWSHAR	Having a formal power-sharing agreement in place	1
DECEN	Having a decentralized political system	0
	Implementing a disarmament, demobilization, and	
DDR	reintegration program	-
	Concluding a structural adjustment program with	
SAP	either the World Bank or IMF	0
	Receiving on average greater than 5 percent of gross	
ODA	national income in official development assistance	0
PCJ	Implementing any form of post-conflict justice	-
	Having higher than the median per capita security	
ARMY	personnel (5.54 per 1,000 residents)	0

The Libya case is relatively straightforward, with easy coding for most set memberships.

Which of these policies were crucial for the uneasy peace that held from 2011 to 2014? What changed in 2014 that led to the breakdown of this stalemate into open conflict? A close examination of the case reveals that the relative stability that existed from late-2011 to mid-2014-- essentially a stalemate punctuated by low-level violence-- was due largely to political, institutional, and military factors, rather than on the reforms comprising the bulk of the multi-track strategy.

### POLITICAL AND INSTITUTIONAL ORIGINS OF THE STALEMATE

original political timeline envisioned forming a The caretaker government to shepherd the country to parliamentary elections 18 months after the end of hostilities. With the NTC in disarray after the assassination of General Younis and Tripoli in the hands of rival rebel groups, the government moved up the political timeline. Elections were scheduled for June 2012, probably the earliest feasible date. (Logistical difficulties pushed the election to July.) The NTC announced the liberation of Libya on 23 October 2011 and resigned, and an interim, technocratic government took office in late November. Early elections were less a strategic choice than the only hope for forming a strong government with national legitimacy.

Public opinion research conducted in 2012 suggested very high support for democracy and elections among the Libyan public, but also extraordinarily high expectations that "democracy" could deliver public goods, cut through difficult social and political problems, and improve the quality of life (Doherty 2012, 13). With no experience in democratic governance, much of the Libyan public undoubtedly viewed democracy instrumentally-- as the means to achieving or even conceptually equivalent to high standards of living, personal and religious liberties, improved personal security and justice outcomes, or an increased role for Islam in public life relative to the

-116-

Qaddafi era, depending on the demographic of the survey respondents (Doherty, 2011, 24-37). Perhaps only a small minority viewed democracy as a political process, a set of rules and norms, or a pattern of government decision-making.

Intensive negotiations over the electoral law lasted until late January 2012, with debate focused on reserving seats for women, and on party-based versus individual-based voting systems. The electoral system that emerged was an obscure hybrid that varied across districts, such that voters in different areas confronted vastly different ballot formats and parties. The electoral law created 13 districts for party-based voting; populous districts were further sub-divided, yielding a final total of 20 districts for party-based voting (POMED 2012). These 20 districts were then divided into 73 constituencies for individual candidate elections (POMED 2012).

Forty members were elected by a plurality in a singlemember district, 80 members were elected by plurality in multimember districts, and 80 members were elected from the 20 partyvoting districts using closed-list proportional representation (Jandura 2012). Individual districts and constituencies blended their voting systems differently: some areas had no party voting, some areas had no individual seats, and in the remaining areas, the ratio of party seats to individual seats varied significantly. Voters in only 50 of 73 constituencies faced both individual and party ballots (POMED 2012). Seats were distributed across Libya based on population, which meant that there was a regional imbalance: 105 seats for Tripolitania in the west, 60 seats for Cyrenaica in the east, and 35 seats for Fezzan in the south. Overall 80 seats were decided based on closed party lists, and 120 based on individual candidates, who could be affiliated with a party. Party lists were required to

-117-

alternate male and female candidates, but there were no reserved seats or women's constituencies.

Organizing the election was daunting. Most authoritarian regimes have at least a skeleton of election infrastructure in place. In Libya, there were no voter lists, no electoral districts, no electoral or party laws, no party organizations, and no strong or credible party-like organizations such as trade unions, civil society organizations, or religious organizations. Election organizers confronted a population with no experience casting ballots; no concept of political parties or how they form; no proficiency interpreting party slogans, platforms, or other electioneering; and no familiarity with overseeing the counting of ballots. Yet despite some violent protest from federalists based in Benghazi over the distribution of seats by population, and the downing of a helicopter ferrying election supplies and officials, the elections were a success, and turnout was far higher than expected.

Only two groups attempted to field party lists in almost every multi-party constituency: the National Forces Alliance led by former NTC Prime Minister Mahmoud Jibril, and the Justice and Construction Party, affiliated with the Muslim Brotherhood. Most other party lists were local to that district; there was no requirement that registered parties field lists in more than one district. This system yielded high party fragmentation: the 80 party seats were distributed across 21 parties, and 15 parties earned only one seat (*Libyan Election Party List Results: Seats Per Party by District* 2012).

The election results reflected these institutional choices, as well as a lack of popular consensus about the trajectory of post-war Libya. The National Forces Alliance won 39 party seats and 25 individual seats. The Justice and Construction Party won 17 party seats and 17 individual seats; Salafi parties and

-118-

independent Salafis won 26 seats overall. Other small parties and non-Salafi independents won 75 seats. No single grouping won a governing majority, and negotiations began immediately on establishing a coalition government.

Though the western media portrayed the results as a victory for "liberals" and a setback for "Islamists," the NFA was more accurately a non-ideological party representing the traditional, business, and conservative establishments. The NFA had recruited candidate slates of local notables, tribal representatives, and prominent families who had remained in Libya during the Qaddafi era (Lacher 2013). There were few expatriate dissidents or bold reformers among their parliamentary group. The group included several prominent former Qaddafi officials, including Jibril himself. While the party was generally skeptical of the Brotherhood, the NFA expressed positions on political Islam that were virtually indistinguishable from the JCP. As a coalition of local power brokers, NFA parliamentarians displayed less internal discipline over the next two years relative to the more ideological, Brotherhood-affiliated party.

Though the NFA won the largest bloc of seats, the GNC elected independent former dissident Mustafa Abushagur to form the government, rather than Mahmoud Jibril. Seen as sympathetic to the Brotherhood, Abushagur twice failed to gain parliamentary support for his cabinets. After the killing of the U.S. ambassador and three others in Benghazi in September 2012, the GNC asked independent former dissident Ali Zeidan to form a cabinet, which he accomplished in mid-November, four months after the election and an entire year after the declaration of liberation. Zeidan had the support of the NFA and independents in the GNC.

-119-

### Local Elections and Local Political Monopolies

Misrata, Benghazi, Zawiya, Derna, and a few other municipalities held wildcat elections for city councils, without supervision or any controlling legislation from the national government. Observers considered these elections generally well run, free, and fair despite these legal shortcomings. Local elections and local political pluralism were not a central part of Libya's post-war peacebuilding strategy. Not until late 2014 did widespread local elections take place, and only then in roughly half the municipalities. Between 2011 and 2014, local political monopolies asserted control over municipal and regional governance.

# Legislative Momentum and Executive Paralysis

Despite Libya's territorial fragmentation, the party fragmentation in parliament, and the ambiguous mandate offered by voters in July 2012, the multi-track strategy of pressing reform forward across all policy dimensions yielded impressive results. With the critical technical and logistical support of UNSMIL, Libyan leaders held months of public consultation and intensive factional negotiations that led to legislation on constitutional reform, electoral laws, transitional justice, decentralization, a national dialogue process, Islamic banking, increases in social security and direct transfer payments, reparations, political liberalization and human rights, cultural and language rights for minorities, and support for victims of rape. Under duress from armed groups occupying government facilities, the GNC also passed a law on political and administrative isolation, which purged many former Qaddafi officials from government. The government was also successful at restarting oil exports. Excepting the isolation law, these legislative and policy achievements generally fell within the

parameters of international-recognized peacebuilding best practices.

The apparent momentum for reform ended up being superficial, and these signals of good faith and reconciliation could not overcome the lack of enforcement mechanisms. The fundamental problem facing post-war Libya was not finding Indeed, agreement among the major political groups. the political differences among the major parliamentary groups were minimal. Rather, the fundamental problem was sticking to these legislative bargains and implementing their terms. Most major legislation was revised repeatedly after one or more parties defected from agreement after it was struck. the The constitutional drafting process was revised several times due to objections from eastern Libyans, and was then delayed by Islamists who feared the outcome of the process. The original political isolation law was revised and strengthened repeatedly before the final, controversial version in mid 2013 supplanted the more lenient original statute from early 2012. Securityrelated initiatives developed in the ministries were announced, and then invariably watered down due to resistance from the revolutionary brigades. The GNC reported out copious legislation only to see its own members (or their allies outside parliament) undermine or stall the reforms at the cabinet or ministerial level.

Simply put, there were no internal or external institutions capable of enforcing any political deals struck among the factions in the GNC. The mechanisms for enforcement present in mature parliamentary systems were weak or non-existent in postwar Libya. First, party discipline within the GNC was weak. Second, the judiciary and civil service were very weak, and their members frequently targeted for assassination. Third, the president, prime minister, and cabinet ministers all served at

-121-

the pleasure of the GNC, and could be dismissed individually without a constructive vote of no confidence. The executive was frequently hobbled by such votes (though votes of no confidence for the prime minister were unsuccessful until early 2014). As a result, turnover in the cabinet was high, including in the security ministries, and many key offices were held by acting or interim ministers for long stretches. Fourth and perhaps worst, members of parliament were not disciplined by the prospect of losing the next legislative election. Though exact numbers are difficult to determine, many Islamists had concluded early in the transition that they could not win national elections with any regularity, and viewed their quasi-control of the GNC as their last, best hope for establishing a regime that fit their preferences (Pack, Mezran and Eljarh 2014, 57-59). These were "one vote, one time" legislators. Other man, one parliamentarians felt secure in their local political monopolies back in their constituencies: they had no reason to fear the opprobrium of the voters or the generation of local political competition. In most cases, the perceived audience costs of defecting from legislative bargains were low. The institutional results were an activist legislature and a neutered executive unable to implement the transition. Their paralysis, however, helped preserve stability since a weak government could not threaten the factions.

### MILITARY ORIGINS OF THE STALEMATE

Since 2011, none of the successive governments in Tripoli has had the capacity to demobilize the armed groups scattered throughout the country. Early efforts to disarm, demobilize, and reintegrate fighters into society (DDR) were minimally effective. The most successful efforts involved the creation of

-122-

the Warriors Affairs Committee, which registered more than 125,000 fighters by the July 2012 election (Wehrey 2012). (A massively inflated number, but still a notable accomplishment.) The Committee paid out small stipends to registrants, but did not require them to hand over weapons, sequester themselves, forswear violence, or relocate -- all against common practices in DDR programs. Otherwise, government DDR policy between the fall of Tripoli in August 2011 and the election in July 2012 was essentially limited to exhorting fighters to leave Tripoli and return home. Again and again, the government announced financial packages, plans to integrate thousands of rebel fighters into the security sector, plans to provide job training and small business loans, a number of 'final' deadlines -- all to induce fighters to self-demobilize. Casual rebels mostly returned home by the end of January, but the best organized and most committed rebel groups remained mobilized in strategic locations around the capital.

There were pressing needs for internal security, and the revolutionary brigades were needed to keep the peace. Communal violence between rival ethnic groups and tribes-- and political violence among militias-- emerged almost immediately, especially in southern Libya. These clashes required 'peacekeeping' actions by the NTC: separating combatants and monitoring locallynegotiated ceasefires. The demoralized remnants of the official security forces lacked the capacity to conduct such missions autonomously, so the new Libyan authorities had no choice but to utilize non-professional, revolutionary brigades of dubious loyalty to the transitional government.

# Local Military and Civilian Councils

After the fall of Tripoli, the NTC called on all municipalities to form military councils to organize local

-123-

security and supervise local militias. Equivalent civilian councils also sprung up to restart public services. Of course, not every town and village had supported the revolution. Many, if not most, of the municipalities in the west and center of Libya had sharply divided loyalties (Crisis Group 2012, 2-3). The result of the NTC's policy was a patchwork of councils across Libya, some revolutionary and militant in character, and others representing cities and tribes closely associated with Qaddafi's regime and fearful of political retribution. The newer councils had tenuous allegiances to the post-Qaddafi government developing in Tripoli, and their creation caused friction with the most committed revolutionaries. The patchwork was itself a source of instability. Revenge attacks and other opportunistic killings-- launched from one town against another-- became commonplace. Municipalities that had defected to the rebellion sought to dominate nearby, loyalist municipalities.

Yet Libya did not collapse into unrestrained violence. From late 2011 though 2012, the prime minister, defense minister, and others shuttled across western, central, and southern Libya to negotiate ceasefires among rival towns and tribes.

The NTC mobilized local councils and then negotiated with them because it enjoyed only limited legitimacy in the areas it did not directly control, and had little autonomous coercive power to extend its writ into western and central Libya. The NTC sought to provide interim security by formalizing, in effect, the fragmentation of social and political life in Libya: the local institutions created were parochial, ideologically heterogeneous, and at best ambivalent about their relationships with neighboring councils and with the national government. Over time, the result in many towns was the creation of local monopolies on force, as independent, spontaneously organized

-124-

militias were folded into their localities' military councils (Secretary General 2011).

# The Supreme Security Committees and The Libya Shield Forces

The interim government sought to coopt the best-organized and most-committed revolutionary brigades into the formal security sector-- an outcome that the armed groups themselves desired since it meant access to salaries and influence over post-war politics. This parallel security sector took shape over early 2012 under the caretaker government.

The most important organizations have been the Supreme Security Committees and the Libya Shield Forces, with a large number of smaller, private armed groups. The Supreme Security Committee was originally founded in September 2011 to coordinate brigade activity in Tripoli, and included rebel commanders from Misrata, Zintan, and Tripoli, and representatives from the nascent defense and interior ministries. In early 2012, the Ministry of Interior took control of the SSC and used its structure to assert control over the neighborhood and village militias across Libya. SSC branches were quickly established across the country. The SSC looked and operated like a police auxiliary: members could serve in their hometowns, and SSC units operated in parallel to local police units. Recruits were paid monthly wages of Euro 650. The Ministry of Interior announced plans to register as many as 25,000 former rebels, who were given six moth contracts with prospects for permanent employment (Secretary General 2012). The first SSC units were operational by February 2012. By April 70,000 fighters had been registered, a figure which swelled to 85,000 only one month later (Crisis Group 2012). External oversight of the SSC from the Ministry of Interior or Police service was minimal, and the SSC structure was under the firm control of revolutionaries.

-125-

The most-committed and best-organized revolutionary brigades emerged as the Libya Shield Forces under the aegis of the Ministry of Defense. The MoD began registering these brigades and working directly with local military councils. The ministry offered formal "certification" and granted registered fighters one-time payments of 1,500 Euros, or 2,500 Euros if they had families. Registration and certification involved no screening of fighters or collection of weapons, or even formal subordination to the ministry. The ministry paid fighters' salaries to their commanders, rather than to the individual fighters. While the first system of payments was scrapped in April due to widespread corruption, the formalization continued.

The first unit of the Libyan Shield Force was formally established in March 2012, in the southern city of Kufra, where revolutionary brigades had been sent to quell communal violence in February. Its proponents envisioned LSF as an interim, allpurpose paramilitary and rapid reaction force that would, in suppress communal violence theory, and then transfer responsibility for security to army or police units. In practice, the army and police were never capable of assuming responsibility for security. Deployment of LSF became routine over the course of 2012 and its share of responsibilities grew. With the encouragement of the MoD, LSF units quickly formed in the western mountains and central Libya, out of the wellorganized revolutionary brigades that did the hardest fighting war. By May, the Libyan during the civil Shield Forces established a high commission to lead it, and also negotiated a with Mod establishing terms of service contract and responsibilities. These working relationships circumvented the army general staff.

From their perspective, revolutionary brigades and military councils-- including the SSC and Libya Shield-- were overseeing

-126-

the post-war political system to ensure a truly revolutionary political transition. They did no want a political system dominated by Qaddafi holdovers, by Tripolitanians, or by any single tribal grouping, and generally they distrusted political actors who did not take up arms during the war (20). How committed they were to Islamism or secularism was a constant source of debate.

## Contracting with New Militias

The prospect of salaries induced new entrants into this private security market by the end of 2012. These new and `firms' smaller were far more opportunistic, far less disciplined, and far less concerned with their public image than the revolutionary brigades. The Petroleum Facilities Guard was founded in 2012, and after some episodic indiscipline, was transferred to the Defense Ministry. The PFG was tasked with protecting oil facilities, especially near Ras Lanuf, from seizure by actors seeking to pressure the central government, which is totally dependent on oil revenues for financing operations. After receiving command of the facilities as Ras Lanuf, PFG units promptly mutinied in support of autonomy for Cyrenaica and local control of oil revenue. The PFG's attempt to sell oil and distribute the revenue to Cyrenaica was only stopped when U.S. Special Forces seized their fully loaded oil tanker in the Mediterranean Sea.

Similarly, the militias contracted for border security have been implicated in smuggling, and the militia hired by the president of the GNC to protect the country's political leadership instead kidnapped the Prime Minster during a political dispute.

With weak official security forces and oversight institutions, the Libyan security sector is riven with

-127-

principal-agent problems: the government and other stakeholders have extreme difficulty monitoring the performance and loyalty of the myriad official and quasi-official agents that it employs directly, or that it contracts with. One clear lesson from the Libya experience has been that a security sector formation strategy that treats militias as private security firms must have a reserve force that can enforce the contract.

### Holding the Transition Hostage

From the outset of the transition, armed groups linked to political factions seized or ransacked the GNC and government offices on numerous occasions. Government leaders and their family members, security officers, and international personnel were targeted for kidnapping or assassination. Policies that threatened the power of the revolutionary brigades were the most contentious; the most prominent example was the intervention of armed groups from Misrata in Tripoli in April and May of 2013. Seizing ministries, the revolutionary brigades clinched the passage of a strict political isolation law that forced the resignation of the president of parliament, ministers, and several prominent members of the GNC, including the former NTC prime minister Mahmoud Jibril, widely considered a moderate and a leading candidate for post-war office. Inadequate security on oil water infrastructure also allowed regionally-based and groups to seize facilities critical to government revenues or to the population of Tripoli, to extort political concessions such release of cabinet appointments, the individuals in as detention, the deconcentration of government offices from Tripoli to Benghazi, the revision of the constitution drafting process, and others.

### THE FEDERALIST GAMBIT

In late July 2013, the Petroleum Facilities Guard unit responsible for the Ras Lanuf terminal mutinied on behalf of the federalism for Eastern Libya (called Cyrenaica or Barqa). This mutiny was probably the single greatest threat to government revenues since the 2011 war: Ras Lanuf accounts for almost 60 percent of Libya's refining capacity, and the Ras Lanuf and nearby Sidra terminals account for one-third of export capacity (U.S. EIA 2014; BBC News 2014). The leader of this mutiny was Ibrahim Jadhran, a rebel commander in the 2011 civil war; Jadhran seized on popular dissatisfaction in eastern Libya with the pace of the transition, the lack of effective public services, and growing insecurity.

Jadhran espoused the federalist position supported by a small but vocal minority of eastern Libyans. (Whether he did so instrumentally-- as a way of marshaling political support for other goals-- is unclear.) Public opinion clearly indicates that federalism has never enjoyed majority support even in eastern Libya, and has minimal support among the political class. Yet a well organized, and very vocal, minority has kept the issue on the national political agenda. Federalists are centered on eastern tribal authorities and enjoyed occasional support from army units in the east.

Federalists in Libya do not advocate for any form of federalism, but a very specific type: the decentralization of authority and sovereignty to a regional entity comprising all of Cyrenaica, which would collect oil revenues directly without passing through central government accounts. These activists would not be satisfied with a federal constitution that established, for example, six federal provinces in the Cyrenaica region, instead of one, nor that allowed the national government

-129-

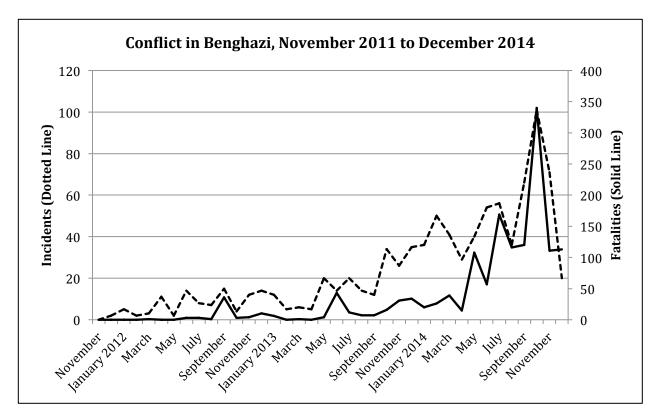
to withhold oil revenues should it wish to.<sup>22</sup> "Federalism" to these activists is equivalent home rule, autonomy, selfdetermination, and local control over local assets. Federalism motivated an (unheeded) boycott of the July 2012 elections, several conferences leading to an (unrecognized) declaration of home rule for Cyrenaica, and the latest mutiny of the PFG. Reflecting the central government's lack of autonomous coercive power, federalists enjoyed influence in Libyan politics disproportionate to their popular support.

Zeidan adopted a cooptation strategy to resolve this crisis, which was unsurprising given the weakness of his governing coalition and the incoherence of the security sector nominally under his control. This strategy ultimately backfired. Jadhran refused offers of substantial patronage and increased influence (Eljarh 2013). The Misratan brigades presumably would have preferred a coercive strategy that left them in control of Ras Lanuf, but this outcome would have been unacceptable to the Benghazi camp. After negotiations collapsed and Jadhran allowed an oil tanker to fill up and put to sea, U.S. Navy SEALS captured the ship. U.S. Special Forces also captured the supposed mastermind of the killings of their ambassador and three others in Benghazi. The Islamist camp had enough and Zeidan lost a vote of no confidence in the General National Congress, and fled to Switzerland. The Islamists in the GNC attempted to install Ahmed Maetiq outside normal order-essentially a coup-- but yielded to a ruling of the Libyan Supreme Court overturning that vote. Defense Minister al-Thinni was appointed interim prime minister.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>22</sup> More specifically, their optimal institutional outcome is likely a locally-controlled, stateowned oil company that exploited oil assets in the east and distributed a share of revenues upward to the government in Tripoli.

## KHALIFA HIFTER AND OPERATION DIGNITY

The federalist mutiny was ultimately a prelude to the recurrence of major fighting for the rest of 2014. In February 2014, a former Qaddafi general declared a coup against the GNC from his base of operations outside Benghazi. Khalifa Hifter is a Qaddafi-era general who had fled to the United States in the 1980s and founded a dissident group. He returned to Libya during the early phases of the civil war, but was denied a major leadership role by the skeptical NTC. Hifter slowly built political support in eastern Libya during the post-war period. His coup announcement was met with "shruqs," but he found allies later that spring, after the GNC refused to dissolve and the violence in Benghazi continued escalating. Hifter announced Operation Karama (Dignity) in May. In addition to his own forces, Hifter swiftly built a coalition of Special Forces units, air force units, federalists, and certain tribal groups from the east and southeast. His coalition was allied with the Zintani brigades in western Libya, and enjoyed increasing support from Egypt and the United Arab Emirates.



In a sense, anti-Islamist forces in eastern Libya had no choice but to go on the offensive by mid-2014. During the latter half of 2013, Benghazi-based Islamist groups had dramatically their campaign of assassinations against increased former Oaddafi figures, security officers, liberal and secular activists, and others seen as hostile to the Islamist agenda. By late 2013, dozens of people were being assassinated each month in Benghazi alone. Most analysts believe that the perpetrators were militants from the increasingly powerful al Qaeda affiliate, Ansar al Sharia (ASL), which had also been blamed for the assassination of U.S. Ambassador J. Christopher Stevens in September 2012. More mainstream Islamist revolutionary brigades in Benghazi, such as the February 17 Martyrs' Brigade and the Rafallah al Sahati Brigade, turned а blind eye to ASL's campaign. Facing annihilation, the non-Islamist elements of Benghazi's political class embraced Operation Dignity.

Hifter's strategy made no distinction between more mainstream Islamist groups and radical jihadists such as ASL. Positioning himself as the Libyan version of President Fattah el-Sisi in Egypt, Hifter's rhetoric against Islamists of all stripes was uncompromising. He blamed the GNC for deliberately cultivating terrorist groups on Libyan soil (Engel 2014); he vowed to "cleanse" Benghazi of terrorists.

Hifter's initial moves targeted both moderate and jihadist Islamists across Libya. Operation Dignity began on 16 May with airstrikes on Islamist positions in Benghazi, the majority of which were launched from Benina airbase on the outskirts of the (Gartenstein-Ross and Barr 2015). Targets included city facilities controlled by ASL, the Feb. 17 Martyrs' Brigade, and the Rafallah al Sahati Brigade (Gartenstein-Ross and Barr 2015). Hifter's forces followed the airstrikes with a ground assault on 17 May, causing scores of casualties. On 18 May, Hifter's Zintani allies surged into Tripoli, seized the GNC, and declared it dissolved. After these initial attacks, Operation Dignity paused, suggesting the initial attacks were meant as а demonstration of the coalition's commitment and capacity, presumably to build the coalition further. Assassinations and bombings, presumably conducted by jihadist groups, increased in late May and into June.

Operation Dignity's indiscriminate targeting of all Islamist groups, regardless of their revolutionary <u>bona fides</u> and their political program, had the effect of strengthening the Islamist alliance in Benghazi, and pushing the Misratan and Islamist camps closer together in western Libya. On 20 June the major Islamist brigades in Benghazi formed the Benghazi Revolutionary Shura Council (BRSC) to coordinate their defense of the city.

-133-

## 2014 PARLIAMENTARY ELECTIONS

During this phase of heightened violence and institutional incoherence, Libyan voters went to the polls on 25 June to elect a successor body to the General National Congress. Throughout 2013 and 2014, the Islamist, JCP, and Misratan groupings in the GNC had resisted new elections or the formation of a new transitional parliament. They had presumably noticed their low standing among the public, and did not want to yield their formal leverage over the post-war transition. Inexplicably, these camps agreed to the elimination of party ballots, which gave the JCP little chance of entering a coalition government. Instead of retaining a reduced foothold in the successor legislature, the Islamist and JCP were virtually shut out of the plurality voting. In a campaign organized by the National Forces Alliance, traditionalists, nationalists, and local notables virtually swept the election results. The GNC then tried to delay the results of the election, and, when that failed, attempted to undermine the legitimacy of the low-turnout election.

# LIBYA DAWN

On 13 July, brigades from Misrata and Tripoli launched their own military operation, Libya Fajr (Dawn). The single most powerful military group in post-war Libya dominated the Dawn coalition: the Misratan revolutionary brigades, which had adopted the mantle of the Libya Shield Forces in 2012. Misrata suffered the most intense fighting during the civil war, and their brigades emerged from the conflict as, by far, the most coherent, potent, and well-led forces in post-war Libya. While sympathetic to political Islam, the Misratan camp was mostly concerned with preventing Qaddafi-era figures from participating

-134-

in government. They were joined in the Libya Dawn coalition by a collection of smaller, quasi-official Islamist militias based in Tripoli; a brigade from Zawiya, the municipal rival of Zintan; Amazigh village and tribal militias; and the Islamist revolutionary brigades from Benghazi, discussed above (Gartenstein-Ross and Barr 2015). Tripoli, Zawiya, and the Amazigh tribes each had their own locally-rooted grievances against the Zintani camp, both from before the war and after.

Operation Dawn began before the election results were released. The coalition took direct aim at the positions held by the Zintan brigades, including Tripoli's main airport, which the Zintanis had held since 2011. A month of fighting followed, which destroyed all the planes located at the airport and Tripoli's main fuel depot. By the end of the fighting, the Dawn coalition was firmly in control of Tripoli, and the Zintani brigades had retreated to their strongholds in the Nafusah Mountains. The Dawn Coalition clearly calculated that their continued political relevance depended on seizing the capital. Anticipating the election results, they struck "prior to [their] release... to increase their leverage by altering the facts on the ground and asserting their control over the capital" (Gartenstein-Ross and Barr 2015).

# NEW STALEMATES

Renewed fighting in 2014 did not lead to any faction gaining the upper hand. By the end of 2014, Zintani forces were able to stop Dawn advances into the Nafusah Mountains, and Hiftar's forces in eastern Libya fought to a draw with the Islamist brigades and ASL. As of this writing, UN-led negotiations are ongoing; the constitutional assembly had not yet published its negotiated document; and Egypt and the United

-135-

Arab Emirates had taken an increasingly assertive role in the conflict.

#### DISCUSSION

Between 2011 and 2014, Libya was most at risk of collapsing into civil war during the frequent, bloody skirmishes that erupted between the major political groups. In other contexts, these clashes could have easily escalated beyond skirmishes into full-fledged combat and nationwide violence. Yet each time a major incident occurred, the key actors managed to pull the country out of danger. The dozens of major skirmishes from 2011 to 2014 repeatedly brought Libya to the brink of war, yet never over the precipice, despite collectively causing thousands of battle deaths. This pattern of violent clashes followed by deescalation repeated regardless of the groups involved, the proximate cause of the skirmish, its location, or its timing within the transition. The explanation for why these crises deescalated rather than intensified into civil war is, indeed, the explanation for why the stalemate in post-war Libya held from 2011 to 2014.

These critical junctures followed a stylized pattern. A review of the deadliest such clash in Tripoli will give the basic contours. On 15 November 2013, hundreds of protesters in Tripoli marched to the Tripoli sanctuary of the Misratan revolutionary brigades and demanded their exit from Tripoli. The march was organized in part by the head of Tripoli's local council, in protest of minor skirmishes during the previous week. The brigades opened fire with machine guns, killing at least 40 people and injuring nearly 400 (Hauslohner 2013). The national government declared a 48-hour state of emergency and demanded that the responsible militias leave Tripoli. Perhaps surprisingly, not only did the Misratan brigades withdraw from Tripoli, but also Zintan's al Qaqaa brigade handed over its Tripoli base to the army, and an Islamist brigade controlling Mitiga airbase handed that facility over to the government (Shennib and Markey 2013). An air force spokesperson told Reuters: "After what happened left week, these men chose to leave voluntarily to avoid more bloodshed. They know the people are determined and that they want police and army instead" (Shennib and Markey 2013). Residents of Tripoli then held a general strike all week, culminating in a Friday protest march numbering in the thousands, organized (again) in part by the Tripoli local council and the student union. At least five brigades had withdrawn from Tripoli by the end of the week (Al Jazeera 2013). Tripoli was then mostly quiet until the start of Operation Dignity in May.

cycle of violence--protest--withdrawal This occurred regularly across Libya from 2011 to early 2014. The pattern that developed was very clear: a brigade or militia would attack civilian demonstrators, a rival armed group, or security forces over a relatively minor dispute -- perhaps over turf, detainees, or passage through checkpoints. Political and civic leaders would respond by calling for protests against continued presence of brigades and militias in the cities; the local population respond with significant demonstrations would sometimes numbering in the tens of thousands. The offending forces would then cede territory, facilities, or 'responsibilities' to the police or army, and withdraw to their stronghold or to the desert. Such cycles occurred in Tripoli in December 2011 and in November 2013, in Benghazi in July 2012, September 2012, June 2013, November 2013, and March 2014, and in a variety of desert towns and villages. All factions were complicit in these clashes, not just the Misratan brigades. These events could have easily escalated into civil war; instead, the SSC units, the Zintani brigades, the Misratan brigades, the Libya Shield

Forces, or others armed groups repeatedly made gestures or concessions that halted the escalation. Indeed, the commanders of the offending forces often resigned. One key takeaway is that these groups viewed themselves as constructive actors, not entrepreneurs of violence, and were sensitive to their reputation and any declines in popular support.

These cycles, while perhaps effective at chastening badlybehaving armed groups, did not a sustainable "strategy" because it depended on several uncertain factors. First, the government and civic leaders needed to react quickly and decisively to exploit the window of opportunity presented by missteps by brigades and militias; incoherence in the executive or fear among civic leaders would be enough to prevent decisive action. Second, the Libyan public had to remain politically activated and willing to take to the streets in the face of armed groups and on behalf of the government; creeping dissatisfaction with politics threatens to undermine that willingness. Third, the brigades and militias needed to remain responsive to public outcry, to be unwilling to double down on mass violence against civilians, and to calculate that its interests were better served by a tactical retreat. Finally and most importantly, there had to be a safe stronghold to which to armed groups could withdraw.

The previous chapter and the present chapter have argued that post-war stalemates hold because of a specific political, institutional, and military architecture. Political, institutional, and military factors have clearly shaped the behavior of the groups most likely to wage civil war-- the dominant, heavily armed groups arrayed across the country. In Libya, this architecture has led the government and the various armed factions in Libya to calculate that their interests are better served by returning, repeatedly, to political negotiation

-139-

instead of escalating to civil war. These factors made it unlikely that strategies of violence would be successful, and they made the stalemate an acceptable, non-threatening status quo to the most important actors. This architecture comprised four pillars: The political independence of factions, a weak formal security sector, secure government revenues, and no attempt at imposing post-war justice.

## THE POLITICAL INDEPENDENCE OF FACTIONS

By necessity, each of the post-war governments that formed in Libya were power-sharing governments in the general sense of the term: all major political and social groups were represented in the cabinet, government policy proceeded on consensus, and armed groups controlling a given territory had an implicit veto on national directives in that territory. The regions of Libya were tied to each other and to the national government only tenuously. The territorial arrangement in post-war Libya resembled so-called frozen conflicts in Azerbaijan, Cyprus, Georgia, Moldova, or Kosovo. In frozen conflicts, sub-national territories are, for the most part, functionally independent of each other, though they share the same juridical sovereignty and they may share some national political process.<sup>23</sup> These conflicts remain frozen because the national government has, for whatever reason, stopped trying to usurp local political authorities in the disputed territories. The territorially-based factions are independent of one another -- they do not depend on the national each other for their revenues, political government or legitimacy, security, or administrative power.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>23</sup> Their shared national political process may include formal institutions, but often the national political process is simply negotiations over their constitutional status.

This condition has been present in Libya since the end of the civil war. The war ended with a single dominant rebel group situated in almost every region of northern Libya (about 90 percent of Libyans live near the coast). Revolutionary brigades from 1) Zintan and the Nafusah Mountains, 2) Misrata, and 3) eastern Libya were clearly the dominant powers in their respective regions, even if dozens of amateur village and neighborhood militias also operated in their regions. In the first months after the war, these powerful groups established rough monopolies of force in their home regions. They did so by subjugating rival municipalities, absorbing or demobilizing the amateur militias, and securing weapons and finances. The Zintani militias also enjoyed some protection from the rugged terrain of the Nafusah Mountains. By mid-2012, the major rebel factions controlled their strongholds and had little reason to fear incursions from the other former rebel groups.

Each of these three factions was situated in relatively defensible space-- dislodging a rival group in a neighboring region would be costly and risky. Though the rival brigades were heavily armed, none had attack helicopters, ground attack aircraft, armored vehicles, adequate C4ISR capabilities, or sheer numbers needed to invade their rivals' strongholds and end any political disputes through combat. Having secure strongholds meant that brigades could safely withdraw from skirmishes with rivals (in Tripoli or Benghazi, for example). This meant that a clash could de-escalate, and negotiations could recommence. (A brigade without a stronghold would be more likely to calculate that its survival depended on standing and fighting.)

This informal, territorially-based power-sharing agreement held through early 2014, when changing conditions made strategies of violence more attractive, and less risky. First, external actors began to see conflict in Libya as part of a

-141-

region-wide contest between Islamists on the one hand and secularists and monarchies on the other. Over time, Turkey and Qatar lent increasing support to Islamist actors in Libya, while Egypt, Saudi Arabia, and the UAE supported the nationalisttraditionalist coalition. These external actors developed linkages with local groups to act as proxies in this putative region-wide contest: Libyan groups received significant amounts of aid, military advice, and arms-- reducing the costs and risks of violence.

Second, the prospect of losing elections in mid-2014 created a fear in the Islamist camp that they would be excluded from the Libyan political transition going forward. With a much diminished Islamist caucus in the national parliament, the NFA and other establishmentarian groups could easily overturn any legislation passed in the GNC, undermine the ability of Islamist groups to compete electorally, and even attempt a massive purge of the Brotherhood and other Islamists from public life, similar to what was taking place, in a more violent fashion, in Egypt next door. Though, for his part, Khalifa Hifter was vocal about purging Islamists from political life in Libya, it was by no means clear whether the NFA and its allies were contemplating such a move. Nonetheless, the Islamists in the GNC calculated it could not take that risk, especially with the shadow of Egyptian events looming over them. The Islamist commitment to democracy and constitutionalism waned as President el Sisi cracked down on the Brotherhood. One Benghazi-based, ultraconservative Islamist democrat, Sheik Mohamed Abu Sidra told the New York Times that President Morsi's overthrow "made it far more difficult for him to persuade Benghazi's Islamist militias to put down their weapons and trust in democracy." "Now they will just say, 'Look at Egypt, ' and you don't need to say anything else" (Kirkpatrick and Hubbard 2013). Ceding the political arena to the winners of

-142-

the election would have created unacceptable vulnerabilities to the Islamist-Misrata bloc.

Third, jihadists in Benghazi accelerated their campaign of assassinations and bombings starting in mid-2013, ultimately forcing a military response from the more mainstream groups who were their targets. Apparently instigated by Ansar al-Sharia and splinters of the Libya Shield Force, assassins began a vicious campaign targeting police officers, judges, human rights activists, women's rights activists, former Qaddafi officials, former and current military officers, and others whom they perceived as enemies. Even in the immediate aftermath of the civil war, Benghazi was never as secure as Misrata, and over the course of the post-war era, Benghazi became increasingly contested space. Public order was provided by an uneasy coalition between Army units that had defected at the start of the war and revolutionary brigades that exceeded the strength of the Army units. The revolutionary brigades were seen as more Islamist and more hostile to the role of Oaddafi-era officials in the transition. Jihadists operating under the banner of Ansar al Sharia took advantage of the cleavage in the security sector, and established themselves in Benghazi no later than September 2012. The jihadists acted as spoilers, antagonized the secularist half of the Benghazi security alliance, and drew the more mainstream Islamists into their orbit.

These three factors led the major actors in Libya to begin fearing their status quo. The autonomy of factions and their safety in their respective strongholds became threatened over the course of late 2013 and early 2014. This change meant letting the stalemate persist was no longer a viable option, and the main actors returned to combat.

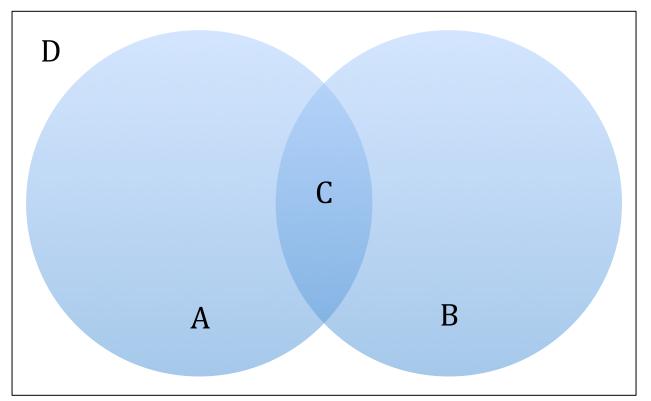
-143-

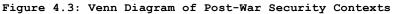
#### A WEAK FORMAL SECURITY SECTOR

A weak formal security sector buttresses a stalemate for at least two reasons. First, having a weak security sector relative to internal armed rivals means that a government is not tempted to attack these rivals: strategies of pure coercion are not open to the government, or are, at least, resource-wasting and unlikely to succeed. All else equal, post-war governments in these situations must <u>coopt</u> armed groups into their coalition, or adopt blended strategies of cooption and coercion depending on relative military strength.

This condition has obviously been present in Libya since 2011 and is closely related, though not identical, to the independence of factions. The political discussion in the previous section demonstrates that the government has been too weak to pacify recalcitrant political actors and spoilers. Imagining the counterfactual is straightforward: if this condition did not hold-- if the government had a stronger security sector -- then it would have behaved differently in the frequent cycles of violence--protest--withdrawal. Instead of letting the offending brigades withdraw safely to their strongholds, the government would be tempted to respond to these windows of opportunity with military force. The government would be tempted to choose military escalation as a strategy, perhaps on the principle of never letting a good crisis go to waste. In this way, a weak security sector was a necessary condition for the repeated de-escalations in post-war Libya. A weak security sector may not be capable of preventing or deterring violent flare ups, skirmishes, or low-level terrorism, but by lessening the temptation for the government to adopt coercive governing strategies, it helped avoid a relapse to full-fledged civil war.

How is a "weak formal security sector" conceptually different than the "political independence of factions?" Consider the notional Venn diagram in Figure 4.2 to represent the set memberships of "weak formal security sector" in region A and "independence of factions" in region B. Libya sits in the overlapping region C: Libya has both a weak formal security sector, and its political factions are functionally autonomous. Area D represents post-war cases that feature strong security sectors, and that have political factions that do not operate as quasi-states.





Many post-war cases sit in either region A or B but not both. In region A, for example, sit post-war El Salvador, Nicaragua, and Nepal. In these three post-war episodes, the formal security sector was quite weak. Though combat was over and non-state actors were largely demobilized, the post-war governments in each of these three countries could not feasibly pursue purely coercive governing strategies against political opponents, former rebels, or rival groups. Former combatants could have easily re-mobilized, and fighting could have easily restarted. At the same time, these cases could not sit in region B: the political factions were not autonomous of one another. Each case featured strong political factions that did not operate (or no longer operated) as quasi-states; they were not (or were no longer) territorially or functionally independent of one another.

Area B in the Venn diagram represents the converse circumstance: post-war episodes where local political factions are operating as quasi-states (territorially and functionally independent of each other and the government), but where the central state has a strong security sector. Political theorists would argue that this situation should be rare: central governments covet power and should not ordinarily allow a weak internal rival to remain standing very long. Based on the codings introduced in the previous chapter, the conventional wisdom is correct. Since 1970 these circumstances do occur only rarely: usually only where an external power intervenes to protect the weaker party (such as Kosovo, Nagorno-Karabakh, Moldova) or in democratic and federal arrangements (such as Northern Ireland).

The Quantitative Comparative Analysis in the previous chapter indicates that "independence of factions" and "weak security sector" are not substitutes for each other, and the presence of each condition is necessary to sort post-war cases into successes or failures for this specific policy recipe. The Libya case is a case where both such conditions are present.

## SECURE GOVERNMENT REVENUES

Despite the incoherence and insecurity of the Libyan transition, the stalemate was not a 'hurting stalemate' to the most important political actor in Libya, the government, because its revenues depended only on the thinnest layer of internal security. So long as basic oil and financial infrastructures operated, political disorder did not seriously threaten Libyan government cash flow. That meant securing oil fields, pipelines, seaports, terminals, refineries, and the central bank.

-147-

Compared to the complicated and invasive administrative infrastructures necessary to collect property taxes, sales taxes, or income taxes, oil revenues are relatively easy to secure even in insecure countries. In Libya's case, small, loyal garrisons with enough firepower to repel lightly armed guerrillas and rioters were basically sufficient to secure virtually all government revenues.

Indeed, truly massive government revenues were collected from 2011 to 2014, despite having a barely functional central government, multiple armed conflicts, and a much-degraded public infrastructure. Absent oil, the Libyan government would have long since collapsed; alternatively, it would have become dependent on external financing by patrons who may have forced the government to confront and defeat militants much sooner. In either case, the oil revenues sustained the stalemate by allowing the government to undertake negotiated, incremental, and cautious governance strategies, rather than gamble on a showdown with the major armed groups.

Figure 4.3 shows the monthly oil revenue figures in Libya since 2010, superimposed on a representation of monthly security incidents over the same period. The two major dips in oil production are due to the civil war (January to October 2011) and the federalist mutiny at Ras Lanuf and Sidra (July 2013 to April 2014). Despite the closure of the oil terminals in eastern Libya for 10 months, the government's patronage-based governance strategy basically continued. Even at reduced output, cash still flowed into government accounts, and such accounts were already full enough to make government payroll and patronage payments. If that failed, government allies from the private sector were willing to step in and help, as they did during the federalist gambit; unnamed government allies offered Jadhran tens of millions of dollars for his loyalty.

-148-

While both the government and insurgents realized the importance of oil exports, and oil infrastructures were major flashpoints throughout the period, the stalemate over that period never threatened the ability of the government to operate. Indeed, that is why anti-government actions often took the form of attacks on oil infrastructure: so long as government full, accounts were the government could ignore many constituencies and their grievances. Ultimately, disruptions to oil production and exports failed to have a major effect on the government's governing strategy--and certainly far less an influence on the government than the personal insecurity of government officials, the cabinet, the prime minister, and members of parliament. With revenues secure enough to operate, the Libyan government never viewed the insecurity of the country as a hurting stalemate, and thus never had to escalate to fullfledged armed conflict from 2011 to 2014.

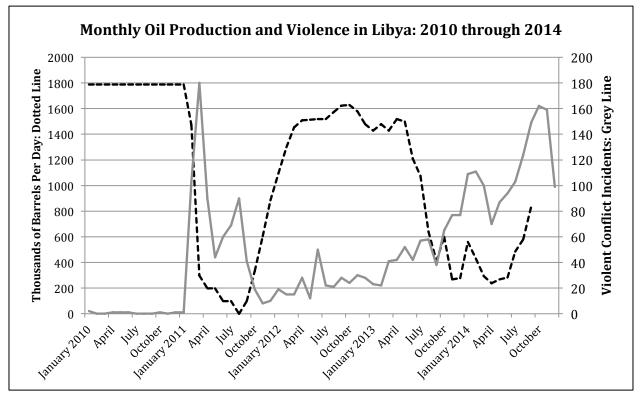


Figure 4.4: Government Revenues in Libya

#### LEGAL IMPUNITY AND THE ABSENCE OF POST-CONFLICT JUSTICE

Another necessary condition for the stalemate was that the government did not try to impose any post-conflict justice mechanism. This is a counterintuitive finding. Most peacebuilding literature argues that post-conflict justice mechanisms increase the likelihood of a successful post-war transition (for example, the work of the United States Institute of Peace). That may be true in many contexts and may be true for the average case, but in Libya and in post-war settings similar to Libya, the absence of post-conflict justice mechanisms is a necessary condition for a stalemate.

This counterintuitive finding rests on self-interest. The lack of an adequate, autonomous post-conflict justice mechanism means that the factions in Libya do not fear the continued stalemate. Whatever crimes the factions commit, there is no prospect of punishment. The Libyan brigades and other violent non-state actors-- even those guilty of major crimes-- have little to fear from the Ministry of Justice, the police, and the judiciary. Quite the reverse: chiefs of police, judges, and interior ministry officials were frequently the targets of assassination attempts. In late 2012, the top ministry of interior official for eastern Libya told the New York Times, "it is impossible for members of a brigade to arrest another... and it would be impossible that I give the order to arrest someone in an militia. Impossible" (Kirkpatrick 2012).

Indeed, post-conflict justice processes are so moribund in Libya that even imposing a victor's justice on former Qaddafi elites has been difficult. A Zintani brigade has held Muammar Qaddafi's son and heir apparent, Saif al Islam, since 2011 without trial, along with dozens of top officials captured during and after the civil war. The Misratans have detained

-150-

hundreds if not thousands of suspected, relatively low-ranking Qaddafi officials, loyalists, and sympathizers-- and are holding them without trial, often in barbaric conditions and often subject to torture. Libyans have refused to allow the International Criminal Court to operate in the country.

The factions have imposed their own rough justice, but they themselves are subject to none. As discussed in the previous section, the government has had a difficult time disciplining military and paramilitary units scattered around the country. The government, aware of its own weakness, does not press the issue. Paradoxically, this impunity sustains the stalemate: the various armed groups in Libya would undoubtedly stand and fight if their members were at risk of fines, imprisonment, or execution.

## PILLARS OF STALEMATES ARE THE FLASHPOINTS OF VIOLENCE

Precisely where one or more of these factors has not held are where the post-war violence in Libya has been highest: Tripoli and Benghazi. In Tripoli, no faction ever developed a local political monopoly; control of the city has been contested across the entire post-war episode. Tripoli-based rebel organizations were never strong enough to establish their autonomy, and instead entered alliances with Zintani and Misratan brigades. Tripoli became dependent on outsiders to provide security, and, as a result, the city became a battleground for groups trying to seize control of the post-war transition.

In Benghazi, the revolutionary brigades were never as unified as they were in Misrata and the western mountains: the alliance between the army and police, secular-nationalist brigades, and Islamist brigades broke down over time. While

-151-

relatively secure in late 2011 and 2012, by 2014 the campaign of assassinations against moderates and secularists provoked an armed response by Khalifa Hifter.

Post-war Libya has been unable to transition from the quasi-anarchy of a post-war stalemate to a conventional political order built on strong institutions, organized security, democratic legitimacy, and economic development. What makes Libya and similar cases so difficult to solve is that the precise conditions that favor an uneasy stalemate are the ones that need to be overcome to build centralized government: namely, the political independence of sub-national territories, a weak official security sector, and the lack of any mechanism to punish illegal or insurrectionist behavior. Attempts to rectify these institutional deficits are, of course, subverted by the various political factions because they put factions in legal jeopardy and weaken their relative power.

## THE WAY FORWARD

Libyan society still comprises the same underlying conditions that sustained an uneasy stalemate for three years while the political process inched slowly forward. If a ceasefire does take hold and political negotiations restart, Libya can still muddle through with judicious external support.

First, the main political coalitions and their affiliated brigades must negotiate a detailed military power-sharing and power-dividing agreement. This agreement should formalize, precisely delineate, and grant legal force to the territorial division of power that already exists on the ground: a western military zone administered by the Zintani brigades, a westerncentral military zone administered by the Misratan brigades, and an eastern military zone to be administered by Hifter's Libyan National Army, once the latter has suppressed the jihadist groups operating there. These brigades would agree to respect each other's territory on the condition that each organization root out violent extremist groups such as Ansar al Sharia. The brigades would share responsibility for keeping the peace among tribes in the south. Most importantly, the parties must negotiate a timeline for the withdrawal of Misratan forces from Tripoli and the transfer of security control to a local, neutral municipal administration that will need to be organized. Once completed, Libya would establish a fourth military zone in the capital and surrounding areas and parliament could return safely to Tripoli.

Obviously such a process is easier said than done. The transfer of territory and assets in and around Tripoli is the central problem and may require a brief international peacekeeping presence. There are multiple precedents for short-

-153-

duration, narrowly-tailored peacekeeping deployments focused on monitoring the withdrawal of forces and facilitating the transfer of territory among factions that have signed a ceasefire agreement but lack the capacity to implement the ceasefire safely. In post-war Guatemala (1997) peacekeeping troops successfully disengaged combatants, monitored compliance with the ceasefire agreement, collected weapons, and demobilized rebel fighters -- all within three months. United Nations forces successfully verified compliance with agreements at the end of the Iran-Iraq War (30 months), at the end of the Aouzou strip conflict (2 months), during the transfer of West New Guinea from the Netherlands to Indonesia (7 months), and after the India-Pakistan War of 1965 (7 months), to name a few examples. Monitoring the withdrawal of Misratan militias from Tripoli, reconstituting and redeploying the city's police, and organizing a local gendarme could take a matter of months. Much of the local materials for a 'police-building' effort already exist on the ground in Tripoli: the local security organizations are simply weaker and less organized than outside brigades. Less intrusively, NATO could offer to secure, repair, and administer Tripoli's international airport or extend a security guarantee to the fourth military zone and monitor its boundaries until metropolitan Tripoli is able to secure itself.

A ceasefire agreement can also be structured to provide opportunities for confidence building. For example, a ceasefire agreement might include public commitments to the ongoing constitution-drafting process, and an agreement to invite international monitors to observe the ratification plebiscite. Despite the current crisis, the constitutional assembly expects to issue an initial draft sometime in early 2015. If events have not overtaken the process, the factions could demonstrate their commitment to peace and democracy by providing security

-154-

guarantees to the electoral commission as it begins work in their zones of control. The constitutional assembly can build confidence by communicating clearly that peaceful or moderate actors should not fear any constitution they produce-- the constitution will marginalize only violent extremists who wish to subvert a free, democratic, and prosperous Libya at peace with itself and its neighbors.

Another opportunity to build confidence is to issue a new municipalities law and hold local elections for city, town, and village councils. Ad hoc "committees of notables" have governed most municipalities in Libya since 2011. All factions seem to agree that strong, elected municipal governments should, at the very least, administer primary and secondary schools, set rules for land use and urban development, collect trash, and provide basic utilities. Municipal reforms and elections can move forward while the constitutional assembly continues its work on issues of regional federalism and autonomy. A ceasefire agreement should include a schedule for holding municipal elections before new parliamentary elections, or at least simultaneous to them. Alternatively, the ceasefire agreement could also establish a rough outline of municipal reforms and appoint a committee to propose a detailed law. Many contentious local government issues -- the size of councils, the number of reserved seats for women and minorities, district versus atlarge elections, partisan versus non-partisan elections -- are relatively technical and 'low stakes' compared to other items on Libya's legislative agenda. Municipal government reform excellent opportunity for therefore provides an national political actors to demonstrate their commitment to democracy and decentralization without engaging controversial issues of federalism or autonomy.

-155-

Local elections will also give a voice to ordinary Libyans, create new stakeholders in Libya's day-to-day governance, and inject a modest pluralism into the local political monopolies that have developed under the Misratan and Zintani brigades. These new stakeholders could act as interlocutors with the brigades that happen to control their particular region, and engage them on issues of basic public services and security. Local elections may shift the political terrain toward moderate, negotiated solutions and away from violence.

Roughly half of all post-war countries endure renewed conflict within five years. In this respect the Libyan experience is common. A failed state or outright civil war can be avoided, but only with a negotiated ceasefire and the suppression of terrorist groups in and around Benghazi. If these efforts fail, Libya's powerful neighbors may ultimately intervene-- an outcome that would open an entirely new Pandora's box.

# PEACEBUILDING AND VIOLENT CRIME IN POST-WAR KOSOVO

Reestablishing public order after civil war has been called the sine qua non of post-war recovery: without basic public order no other peacebuilding policies can move forward effectively. What factors shape the ability of peacebuilders to establish public order after civil war? What are the determinants of institutional effectiveness among security sector actors in post-war settings? This chapter addresses core questions of order, institution-building, and post-conflict risks by conducting a quantitative analysis of the economic, geographic, social, and security factors that contributed to patterns of violent crime in post-war Kosovo. This chapter utilizes new data and information that were gathered during field research in the disputed province, including interviews with security sector actors. It contributes to the peacebuilding research program in at least three ways. First, it shows that and of itself is crime prevention in an indicator of institutional effectiveness. Post-war societies with disproportionately high crime rates likely to are have ineffective security sectors. Second, this chapter establishes the patterns and determinants of post-war violence in one of the most-cited, paradigmatic cases in the post-war and peacebuilding literatures. Third, it offers a micro-level test of current theories of peacebuilding success -- theories that were generated primarily from macro-level research strategies.

Aside from being intrinsically interesting as indicators of institutional effectiveness, violent crime rates examined here are also potential precursors or early warning signs of war

-157-

recurrence: murder, aggravated assaults, arson, and IED attacks. The analysis shows that poverty, rough terrain, and ethnic heterogeneity are not good predictors of violent crime in postwar Kosovo. Instead, in post-war Kosovo, the presence of both international police and local police are highly correlated with violent crime.

Kosovo Police Service (KPS) deployments had a significant and large downward effect on murder rates and IED attack rates in a given region of Kosovo. This effect translated to between three and nine fewer murders annually in a sub-region of Kosovo, for each additional percentage point of KPS officers per 1,000 residents.

In general, violent crime rates in post-war Kosovo were not determined by the same factors that the civil war literature identifies as critical to avoiding conflict recurrence. This finding suggest that the data generating processes for post-war crime and conflict recurrence are distinct.

International peacekeeping operations have grown in both number and complexity during the past twenty-five years. During the Cold War, peacekeepers were mostly deployed in response to international conflicts, and they generally served as unarmed or lightly-armed observers or monitors. In that era, peacekeepers' included physically separating combatants, primary tasks monitoring ceasefires, preventing the escalation of minor violations, and acting as a "neutral referee." Since 1989, two related trends have emerged. First, the international community more frequently deploys peacekeeping missions to address civil wars rather than international wars. Second, the role of peacekeeping missions has been enlarged to include "peacebuilding," or an attempt to address the underlying sources conflict with varying combinations of of economic reconstruction, humanitarian relief, political mediation,

-158-

election-monitoring, institution-building, democratization, and even direct international trusteeship. Though they each have a mixed record, peacekeeping and peacebuilding are "arguably the most important innovation in international conflict management since World War II" (Fortna 2004a).

Most recent scholarship on peacekeeping and peacebuilding takes a quantitative approach, using multiple regression analyses on cross-national or cross-conflict datasets. These estimate the independent effect studies attempt to of peacekeeping and peacebuilding missions on conflict recurrence and other post-war outcomes, like democratization. Doyle and Sambanis (2000, 2006), Fortna (2004b), Gilligan and Sergenti (2008), and others generally find that these international interventions do indeed improve the prospects for peace. Explanations for how these missions work-- the causal mechanisms of peacekeeping and peacebuilding-- are less well-studied. Hypothesized mechanisms range from reconstituting institutions to manage political conflict, to restructuring the incentives of potential rebels to join the legal labor market, to reconciling social groups, and to solving security dilemmas. This chapter uses within-country, micro-level social statistics to evaluate these competing theories of peacebuilding mechanisms.

The "Kosovo model" is an extreme case of peacebuilding. Following the 1999 NATO intervention and the withdrawal of Serbian security and administrative personnel, the United Nations (UN) assumed direct control of Kosovo, and organized the provision of everything from social welfare payments to internal through United Nations security. Acting the Interim Administration Mission in Kosovo (UNMIK), the international community deployed its own police officers, judges, prosecutors, health administrators, development and reconstruction teams, education and environmental policy experts, and other

-159-

administrators, monitors, and consultants. These personnel were drawn from UN member-states, but especially from Western Europe. NATO troops were responsible for Kosovo's internal and external security immediately after the war, but NATO quickly began transferring control of internal security to UNMIK police units, composed of police officers from UN member states. By June 2000, NATO had transferred control of police functions to UNMIK in four of five Kosovo regions, and was only technically in control of fifth (Muharremi, et al. 2003). the NATO troops, administratively and legally distinct from UNMIK, retained exclusive responsibility for external security, disarmament of Kosovo rebels, and border security.

required such Kosovo's post-war environment а large administrative and policing component because few Kosovo-Albanians had formal experience in government, and no state institutions were functioning. Beginning in the mid-1980s, Serbian nationalists led by Slobodan Milošević began an increasingly aggressive, systematic exclusion of ethnic Albanians from the political system and the administrative state in Kosovo. Ethnic Albanians responded with a boycott of the Serbian government, and formed a "parallel system" of social welfare, education, and political institutions starting in 1990; the Albanian diaspora subsidized this system. When Serbian officials fled the province after the NATO intervention, few residents had any experience in formal administrative governance, especially democratic policing. Even granting the "parallel system," post-war Kosovo was an unusually clean slate compared to other well-known peacebuilding operations, for example in Bosnia, which had multiple legacy institutions in need of reform but not wholesale invention. No Kosovo-Albanian "state" was waiting in the wings (Mertus 2009). Since the end of the Cold War, few international interventions have matched

-160-

UNMIK's level of penetration and control over the post-war society.

Because the peacebuilding effort in Kosovo is an extreme case, it is therefore "likely to offer advantages in elucidating the mechanism at work in a causal relationship" (Gerring 2001). In situations where social phenomena are difficult to measure, typical-cases may have causal effects and causal mechanisms too subtle or attenuated to detect using conventional methods. For these phenomena, an extreme-case study may uncover causal mechanisms because they are more readily apparent. The drawback of examining an extreme case is that conclusions drawn from that case may not be representative of other cases (externally valid). For example, the fact that international police in Kosovo were more effective at reducing crime than local police might not tell you much about how international policing affects crime rates in post-war Sierra Leone. Nonetheless, single case studies are useful insofar as they can test prevailing theories, help develop theories, and be compared to a body of other case studies (Rueschemeyer 2003). Given that peacebuilders "lack any viable theory about how to build a functioning state apparatus" after civil war (Fearon and Laitin 2004), this chapter is intended to stimulate theory building on peacekeeping and peacebuilding mechanisms.

-161-

#### PEACEBUILDING IN POST-WAR KOSOVO

Kosovo is a densely populated, landlocked territory at the center of the Balkan Peninsula with a population of around 1.8 million to 2 million, and a per capita income of \$3,940 in 2013. As of 2011, 30 percent of the population lived below the poverty line. The economy is heavily dependent on international aid and remittances from Kosovo-Albanians living abroad. Kosovo sits at the nexus of several important transportation corridors, and contains large deposits of zinc, nickel, coal and lignite, and lead; Kosovo also has very fertile farmland. According to the 2011 census and international estimates, roughly 89 percent of Kosovo's people are ethnic Albanians, five percent are Serbs, and six percent are another ethnicity, mostly Turkish, Bosniak, Roma, and Gorani. Ethnic Albanians in Kosovo are mostly Muslim, while the Serbs are mostly Orthodox Christian.

Previously an Ottoman vilayet, Kosovo was divided between Serbia and Montenegro at the Congress of Berlin in 1878. After World War II, the Socialist Federal Republic of Yuqoslavia granted Kosovo autonomy as a territory within the Socialist Republic of Serbia. During the Cold War there were periodically discussions about elevating Kosovo's constitutional status, but the province ultimately never attained the standing of a Yuqoslavia like Bosnia, constituent republic of Croatia, Macedonia, Montenegro, Serbia, and Slovenia. Ethnic Albanians comprised the majority of the population of Kosovo since at least World War II (Malcolm 1998). Through a combination of the growth of the Kosovo-Albanian community and natural the outmigration of Kosovo-Serbs, Serbs declined from about 25 percent of the population in 1948 to about 10 percent by the end of the Cold War. Across the same period, other minorities

-162-

comprised between five and 10 percent of Kosovo's population and their proportions remained comparatively stable.

Durina the communist period, Kosovo-Serbs enjoyed privileged status compared to their Albanian counterparts. Aside from a short period in the 1970s, Serbs dominated government positions, party offices, and the managerial class (Kubo 2010). Albanians formed the majority of the labor and agricultural classes in Kosovo, which was the poorest and most agricultural region of Yugoslavia. Most government business was conducted in the Serbian language. After the death of longtime leader Josip Broz Tito in 1980, ethnic tensions across Yugoslavia increased. Serb nationalists led by Slobodan Milošević gained ascendancy in the Serbian Federal Republic in 1986. As communist rule faltered Eastern and Southeastern Europe in 1989, Milošević across adopted increasingly nationalistic policies. In June 1989, the 600<sup>th</sup> anniversary of the Battle of Kosovo, he gave a virulently nationalistic speech at a mass rally near the battlefield outside the provincial capital, Prishtinë/Priština. Milošević's speech and other nationalistic propaganda placed Kosovo and its eponymous battle at the center of the Serbian identity. Later in 1990, he revoked Kosovo's autonomy and began a purge of ethnic Albanians from the political system and the bureaucracy. The Yugoslav army surrounded the Kosovo assembly in Pristina, which voted to abolish itself under duress. Protests by local leaders, workers, students, and intellectuals were suppressed with force. Locals formed a new assembly in secret, and this assembly declared Kosovo an independent republic within Yuqoslavia in 1990.

Events elsewhere in Yugoslavia overtook unrest in Kosovo. The political situation deteriorated sharply after the Republics of Slovenia, Croatia, and Macedonia declared independence in 1991. Bosnia-Herzegovina followed in 1992. The rump Yugoslavia

-163-

briefly attempted to halt these secessions by force. The situation degenerated further when Serb minority communities in Bosnia and Croatia rebelled against the secessions, and sought to join their areas to a Greater Serbia. Civil wars in Croatia and Bosnia erupted. In the first phase of the Bosnian war, Croat communities also fought Bosniaks (Muslim Slavs) for control of the Bosnian government, but ended up forming an alliance against the Bosnian Serb rebels. Croatia and Serbia supported their proxies in each of these fights. Though relatively brief, the wars in Bosnia and Croatia caused 100,000 and 20,000 battle deaths, respectively. By 1995, the United Nations, the European Union, and NATO had been drawn into the conflicts, establishing a series of peacekeeping missions that, at their height, totaled more than 60,000 military personnel in Bosnia and 15,000 military personnel in Croatia.

In the midst of this tumult, Kosovo-Albanians organized an illegal referendum on full independence in late 1991, which passed overwhelmingly. With this mandate, the underground Kosovo assembly declared full independence in 1992. Unlike elsewhere in Yugoslavia, however, the situation did not immediately turn violent. Instead, the rump Yugoslavian and Serbian governments simply ignored the declaration, and ethnic Albanians began a long boycott of the government. Having been purged from the political system and bureaucracy, ethnic Albanians formed "parallel systems" of social welfare, education, taxation, and political institutions starting in 1990. Albanians from Albania and from the global diaspora subsidized these parallel systems. During the 1990s, the poet Ibrahim Rugova was the leader of this non-violent protest movement as the elected "President of the Republic of Kosova."

Kosovo-Albanians dissatisfied with the progress of Rugova's non-violent movement organized the Kosovo Liberation Army (KLA)

-164-

in the mid-1990s. In early 1996, the KLA began conducting lowlevel attacks against police stations, military bases, and other Serb-controlled government installations. The KLA pursued a classical insurgency strategy, with some suggesting that the ultimate goal was to provoke an overreaction from Milošević's regime that would end with an international intervention leading to Kosovo's independence. The rebellion developed linkages to groups in Albania and in the Albanian diaspora, receiving funding and weapons from both sources. The Serbian government deployed military and paramilitary units to the province, and conducted aggressive raids in suspected KLA strongholds. By 1998, the KLA had become capable of a sustained insurgency campaign, and the government responded with ever-greater force. Violence escalated across 1998, with battle deaths reaching the low thousands.

Diplomatic efforts to end the conflict began in earnest in mid-1998. Both sides of the conflict made and then broke a series of commitments to the Contact Group, composed of France, Germany, Italy, Russia, the United Kingdom, and the United States, as well as representatives from the European Union, the Organization for Security and Cooperation in Europe (OSCE), and the UN. By September 1998, over 230,000 refugees had fled the fighting, and on 23 September the UN Security Council passed Resolution 1199, demanding a ceasefire, the withdrawal of Serbian forces, the return of refugees, and the uninhibited access of international monitors to the province. In November, the OSCE deployed the Kosovo Verification Mission to monitor compliance with Resolution 1199. Nevertheless, Serbian paramilitaries conducted a series of well-publicized mass killings during late 1998 and early 1999, which accelerated efforts at a negotiated settlement as well as NATO preparations for war.

-165-

After much shuttle-diplomacy, and under pressure from the Group, Kosovo-Albanian and Yugoslavian/Serbian Contact representatives agreed to meet at а peace conference in Rambouillet, France, in February 1999. The Contact Group proposed a settlement that included an immediate ceasefire, negotiations over final status, the preservation of Yugoslavia's territorial integrity, the protection of the cultural rights of national communities, the prosecution of war crimes, ethnic proportionality in Kosovo's bureaucracy and police services, democratic self-governance for the people of Kosovo, the decentralization of power to municipalities, and the supervision of the agreement by competent international bodies (Weller 1999:225-226). Despite much negotiation, these were essentially the terms of the final agreement. After the negotiating teams reconvened in Paris in mid-March, the Kosovo delegation signed the Rambouillet Accords, but the representatives from Belgrade refused to do so on 18 March. Indeed, during a break in talks, Belgrade had increased its troop presence in and near Kosovo. On 20 March the Kosovo Verification Mission withdrew from Kosovo, and Serbian forces began a new offensive in northern and central Kosovo. On 24 March, the NATO air war began, with the stated aim to impose the terms of the Rambouillet Accords on Belgrade.

Airstrikes lasted from 24 March to 10 June 1999. During this air campaign, Serb forces ultimately expelled around 850,000 Kosovo Albanians from the province. Another 600,000 were displaced internally, meaning that virtually the entire Kosovo-Albanian community was displaced. NATO inflicted significant casualties on Serbian military forces, and destroyed much infrastructure, reaching even to Belgrade. Negotiations with Milošević's regime continued throughout the strikes. On 9 June, Serbian officials agreed to a Military Technical Agreement, outlining the terms of their withdrawal from Kosovo. The

-166-

following day, NATO suspended its campaign, and the UN Security Council adopted Resolution 1244, imposing the terms of the Rambouillet Accords on Kosovo, and setting the framework for the peacekeeping operation in the province. By mid-June 1999, 20,000 NATO peacekeepers had entered the province, 600,000 Kosovo Albanian refugees had returned, and perhaps 200,000 Serb and Roma civilians had fled north to Serbia proper in fear of reprisals.

#### CRIME AND PUNISHMENT IN POST-WAR KOSOVO

The United Nations Interim Administration Mission in Kosovo (UNMIK) shared responsibilities for security with NATO's Kosovo Force (KFOR). UNMIK had sole responsibility for the civilian peacebuilding mission, which was headed by а Special Representative of the Secretary-General, initially French diplomat Bernard Kouchner.<sup>24</sup> The peacebuilding mission recognized that the political institutions in Kosovo would need to be built essentially from scratch; UNMIK was organized into four "pillars," each headed by a Deputy Special Representative of the Secretary General. Pillar 1 (Police and Justice) and Pillar 2 (Civil Administration) were administered by the United Nations, Pillar 3 (Democratization and Institution Building) was administered by the OSCE, and Pillar 4 (Reconstruction and Economic Development) was administered by the European Union.

The international community decided upon a division of labor that gave the OSCE responsibility for training new government officials, including police officers. The OSCE, however, remained under the aegis of UNMIK and worked in partnership with the international police in Pillar 1 to train local police officers. The OSCE quickly renovated the abandoned Serbian police school in Vushtrri/Vučitrn and graduated the first class of cadets in October 1999. UNMIK decided to train and deploy officers as quickly as possible, and several officer classes trained simultaneously at the Kosovo Police Service School (KPSS). From February 2000 through May of 2001, an average of about 260 officers graduated the academy each month. The rate dropped in 2001 and 2002, and again from 2003 to 2005.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>24</sup> Sérgio Vieira de Mello was SRSG for a single month during UNMIK's initial entrance into Kosovo.

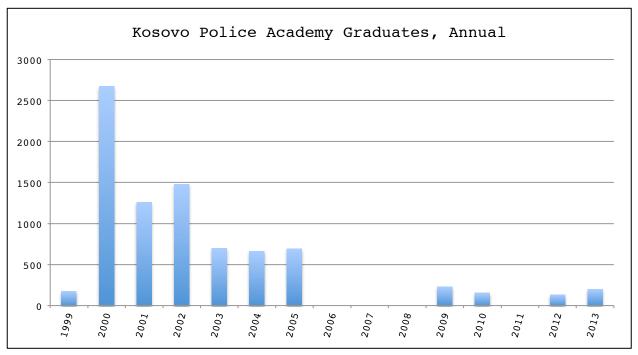


Figure 5.1: Annual Academy Graduates (Source: OSCE)

Figure 5.1 shows the annual graduates from the KPSS since 1999 (data is missing for 2006, 2007, 2008, and 2011).<sup>25</sup>

By the end of 2001, the KPSS had graduated over 4,100 cadets. By December 2005 the total number of graduated cadets was 7,600. Originally, cadets received eight weeks of basic training in police work at Vushtrri/Vučitrn followed by 19 weeks of field training under the supervision of a UNMIK Field Training Officer. Basic training was increased to 12 weeks in September 2001 and to 20 weeks in May 2004. Field training was reduced to 15 weeks in September 2001. Field training included both the UNMIK mentorship and an "additional 80 hours of classroom training in traffic accidents, criminal investigation, community policing, and domestic violence" (Jones, et al. 2005). During field training, UNMIK officers evaluated trainees daily; after completion officers entered a two-year probationary

 $<sup>^{25}</sup>$  The school has been called the Kosovo Academy for Public Safety since 2011.

period, during which international officers evaluated their local counterparts less frequently.

Even after the probationary period ended, all local officers worked alongside international officers at municipal and regional stations. KPS and UNMIK officers often conducted joint patrols, conducted joint investigations, and observed each other's behavior. Learning thus continued in a day-to-day, if less formal, setting. UNMIK police rotations in country were generally short, averaging from six to nine months, limiting the opportunity for a stable mentor-relationship. Over time, local officers were expected to assume greater responsibility and autonomy.

The culmination of this training and mentoring process was a transfer of command authority from international to local officers. This occurred first at the municipal level, then at the regional level. The transfer process was phased: command of traffic enforcement was transferred to local control first, then minor investigations, then major investigations, and, finally, the executive command of the municipal station. Final transfer relegated UNMIK police to a monitoring role. Before the transfer, the UN presence at the municipal police station would have declined to two monitoring officers. This process was followed for regional police directorates as well, but regional directorates had a larger residual UNMIK police presence. Local media widely reported municipal and regional transfer ceremonies, and prominent UNMIK and local officials often attended.

The final steps in the transfer to local command authority were the creation of Ministries of Interior and Justice, which took place in 2005, and the transfer of KPS command to the Ministry of Interior in April 2006. Even then, however, international police and prosecutors located at headquarters

-170-

lead or supervised the most sensitive investigations, including those involving murder, inter-ethnic violence, financial crimes, and organized crime.

Negotiations over Kosovo's final status commenced in 2006 after local political and administrative institutions met a series of benchmarks. By then, independence was essentially a fait accompli, and the only uncertainty was whether Serbia and its ally Russia would recognize Kosovo's independence, perhaps as part of a novel "joint sovereignty" arrangement with the European Union. In the end, the differences were too great. Kosovo declared independence on 17 February 2008; by early 2015 Kosovo had been recognized by over 50 percent of UN member states, and over 80 percent of EU member states. UN Security Council Resolution 1244 remains in effect, but primary oversight of the police and justice sector now resides with the European Union Rule of Law Mission in Kosovo (EULEX) since 2008. EULEX investigates and prosecutes sensitive cases and "monitors, mentors, and advises local counterparts in the police, justice and customs fields." It too has monitoring officers at many municipal stations, and at the regional and national levels.

Evaluations of Kosovo's post-war policing regime have been generally positive. Most observers consider the creation of the Kosovo Police Service to be a success, perhaps the greatest success of the entire post-war recovery effort. The KPS repeatedly scored at the top of surveys of citizen satisfaction and trust, far above the post-war assembly, presidency, political parties, bureaucracy, courts, and UNMIK itself (Rees 2004, ISSR 2006, OSCE 2008). Expert analysts generally concurred in these positive assessments. Scholarly evaluations of Kosovo's post-war crime and policing system have employed historical, ethnographic, or qualitative methods; several important themes emerge from this work. First, the initial training at the Kosovo

-171-

Police Service School focused heavily on community policing, multi-ethnic policing, ethics, and other topics important to establishing a democratically-minded police force, but did not train police on the Kosovo legal system itself. This was a practical issue: not until the 2004 enactment of a new criminal code could academy training incorporate specific instruction in (Heinemann-Grüder and Grebenschikov 2006; Kosovo law Peake 2004). Second, UNMIK police had the equipment expected in modern, western police forces, but the KPS was "starved" of equipment and other resources. During major riots in 2004, KPS officers had no anti-riot gear, and rioters could easily monitor KPS's open radio communications (Crisis Group 2004; Peake 2004). Lack of computers and renovated stations hampered the mission. The international community, through the provisional Kosovo government, paid officers roughly €250 per month, barely enough for rent in the capital.

This chapter adds to our understanding of the peacebuilding mission in Kosovo the first quantitative analysis of crime and policing in the territory.

## THEORETICAL AND EMPIRICAL LITERATURE ON PEACEKEEPING AND PEACEBUILDING

## PEACEKEEPING AND PEACEBUILDING

The advent of peacekeeping and peacebuilding as common policy tools has generated considerable scholarly research on their patterns. This literature has sat alongside the larger, related research program on civil war. The theoretical and empirical literatures have focused on a few narrow questions: Where do peacekeepers go? Are they effective when they get there? Does their presence improve the durability of peace after war? Quantitative scholarly research on these questions reaches back to the middle of the Cold War. Wilkenfeld and Brecher (1984) found that, from 1945 to 1975, the UN was far more likely to intervene in response to the most serious and complex international wars: for instance, in the most violent conflicts, in conflicts involving territorial or existential threats to member-states, or in crises with greater numbers of participants. Yet researchers studying the Cold War cases did not find conclusive evidence that international peacekeeping was effective. Butterworth (1978) found that UN interventions had no lasting impact on conflict reduction, though Haas (1986) found that the most robust UN military operations were successful at ending conflicts. Wilkenfeld and Brecher (1984) found that UN involvement raised the likelihood of a settlement agreement, but had no effect on the recurrence of conflict, suggesting that UNbrokered ceasefires and peace agreements were not very effective. Looking at international conflict from 1946 to 1988, Diehl, Reifschneider, and Hensel (1996) examined the effect of various types of UN interventions on the duration of peace. These interventions ranged in intensity from diplomatic efforts, to peacekeeping, to enforcement. They found that peacekeeping

-173-

interventions reduced the probability of conflict recurring within 10 years by roughly 70 percent.

As noted above, after the Cold War ended, the UN began deploying peacekeeping missions in response to civil wars and with the peacebuilding formula. A series of prominent civil wars and peacekeeping failures in Somalia, Yugoslavia, and Rwanda stimulated research into the effectiveness of peacekeeping and peacebuilding after civil war. Doyle and Sambanis (2000, 2006) constructed a new data set of all civil wars since 1944, and all peacekeeping and peacebuilding missions across the same period. They found that peacebuilding efforts have a large and significant positive correlation with the endurance of peace after civil war, while traditional peacekeeping operations and other mission types have less conclusive effects. These findings were confirmed by Fortna (2004a) and Gilligan and Sergenti (2008). Indeed, the latter study used a notably improved methodology and found that the earlier researchers significantly underestimated the positive effect that UN peacekeeping has on the duration of peace after civil war.

## CAUSAL MECHANISMS OF PEACEKEEPING AND PEACEBUILDING

Why does peacekeeping and peacebuilding work? How do peacekeepers and peacebuilders create a more durable peace after civil war? Scholars have advanced several explanations. The arguments are military and structural in first nature. Peacekeeping and peacebuilding missions can mitigate coordination problems, such as in situations where the combatants seek peace but lack the capacity to implement a peace agreement safely. For example, peacekeepers can assist with communication among military forces that are maneuvering away from the front lines, or can assist with demobilization and the

-174-

collection of weapons (Doyle and Sambanis 2006:53-54). Even unarmed peacekeepers can act as conflict managers by "punishing" defections from the peace agreement-- for instance by "naming and shaming" defectors. Unarmed peacekeepers often have access to political and financial resources they can use to reward compliance. Peacekeepers can reduce perceptions of vulnerability by providing credible information to combatants on opponents' preferences, strengths, and compliance; peacekeepers can also reduce perceptions of vulnerability by physically separating warring parties, which has the salutary effect of reducing the chances of misperceptions or accidents escalating into renewed war (Fortna 2008:86-98).

The second set of arguments addresses peacebuilding mechanisms specifically: peacebuilding missions are, at least in institution-building missions. Peacebuilding erects part, closely-supervised political institutions that, at least in theory, constrain bad behavior of former combatants and provides forums for the peaceful negotiation political disputes. As practiced by the United Nations and Western powers since 1989, peacebuilders do not impose just any institutions on post-war societies, but very specific ones: liberal democracy and market economies. The logic behind this international peacebuilding formula is the belief that countries with market economies and democratic regimes are more peaceful at home and less likely to wage war abroad, at least against other democracies. Political theorists as far back as Kant have linked democracy and peace: democracies are thought to have internal mechanisms for the peaceful resolution of political disputes, to ensure universal participation in representative self-government, to codify alternation in government, and they foster norms of negotiation, compromise, and tolerance. Empirical work on the Democratic

-175-

Peace Theory has shown that democracies virtually never fight one another (e.g. Oneal and Russett 1999).

For other scholars, the key institutional transformations are market reforms. These scholars emphasize that societies with market economies outperform other societies across a range of indicators of social well-being and human development, and show that growth-promoting reforms reduce the risk of civil war and other forms of political violence (e.g. Collier and Hoeffler 2004). These perspectives inform international peacebuilding strategies devised at the United Nations, in Washington, and in Europe, but have earned criticism for conflating the stability of established capitalist democracies with the destabilizing, complex, and often bloody processes of marketization, development, and democratization (Hegre, et al. 2001, Paris 2004:44-46). Despite criticism, this "international peacebuilding consensus" is so strong that the "typical formula" is encouraged even in post-war countries relying solely on local peacebuilding capacities, in societies with little or no experience with democracy or market capitalism, or even where violence is ongoing.

A third set of causal mechanisms includes changing labor market incentives for potential rebel soldiers. The most robust finding in the civil war literature is that civil wars are a problem of poor countries. Collier, Hoeffler, and Söderbom (2008) argue "multinational post-conflict efforts should be concentrated disproportionately in the poorest countries and should focus heavily on economic recovery" (Collier, Hoeffler, and Söderbom 2008:469). In the short run, this can mean stabilizing the currency, reopening banks and markets, providing electricity on a predictable schedule, securing and opening major transit corridors, and increasing the supply of food and fuel. If the war destroyed much physical capital and caused much

-176-

suffering, local or international peacebuilders may provide humanitarian assistance until the new infrastructure and institutions of the economy are produced.

## Sources of CRIME AND SOCIAL VIOLENCE

Theories of peacebuilding and civil war have considerable overlap with theories of crime and social violence. The variables investigated are frequently identical: labor market and other economic indicators, ethnic diversity, social capital, the presence or absence of an effective security sector. Traditional models of criminal behavior generally follow one of three complementary approaches: rational choice, sociological, or cultural. Gary Becker (1968) first introduced a rationalchoice model of criminal behavior and criminal justice policy. He conceived of criminals as utility-maximizing individuals who local labor markets. face certain incentive structures in Individuals calculate whether they will gain more utility from engaging in crime, or by selling their labor for legal wages. An individual's estimation of their expected value for licit or illicit labor might be sensitive, on the one hand, to the prevailing wage rate for their skills and the likelihood of finding work, and, on the other, the payoff of crime, and the probability of arrest and conviction. Regression analyses based on this approach allows researchers to incorporate a rich variety of socio-economic and criminal justice indicators, such as the prospect of future earnings, the adequate presence of police, the severity of criminal punishment, education levels, and others. Of particular relevance to the analysis here, this body of research explores the effect of police presence on crime.

-177-

Starting in the 1980s, sociological explanations of crime gained renewed prominence. These theories moved beyond conceptualizing criminal behavior as strictly a cost-benefit and labor market calculation. William Julius Wilson, Charles Murray, James Q. Wilson, and others considered the importance of peer relationships, demographics, and social capital in determining the prevalence of crime. In particular, social disorganization theory predicts that urban areas in which the levers of official and unofficial social control (say, police, social networks, churches) are in decline have greater rates of social deviance (Kelling and Wilson 1982; Sampson 1986). More recently, scholars have included culturalist explanations into theories of crime (Almgren 2005). The relevance to this study is that ethnic, religious, and cultural diversity may generate different patterns of crime data; in certain contexts, ethnic diversity and inequality may even "cause" crime. In Kosovo, the diverse palette of ethnic and religious groups-- Albanian, Serb, Bosniak, Roma, Gorani, Turk, Muslim, Orthodox, Catholic, and others-- may have different tolerances for crime, may rely on different forms of social control, and may interpret social deviance differently.

## DATA SOURCES AND EMPIRICAL STRATEGY

## MEASURING CRIME

The Kosovo Police Service provided yearly reported crime from 1999 to 2011, broken into crime type and region of Kosovo. Their computerized data management infrastructure is called the Kosovo Police Information System (KPIS). KPIS began just after the war concluded in 1999. UNMIK police administered the system until 2007, when control was handed over to the Kosovo Police Service. From 1999 through 2007, KPIS tracked 59 individual offenses. From 2007 through 2011, crime categories expanded to 187 offenses, to provide law enforcement with more granular data.<sup>26</sup> Despite these transitions, most major violent crime figures are directly comparable across the entire period. (The following analyses are limited to the comparable data.) A given incident might generate several crimes in the database, for example a stolen car being driven recklessly causing a pedestrian fatality might lead to several charges. Crime data can be entered into KPIS in four ways. First, a citizen can report a crime to officers, who then file a police report and enter this report into KPIS. Second, police can directly witness a crime, and enter their report into KPIS. Third, Kosovo police investigators from the major crimes division at headquarters can report crimes to the database. Fourth, international police investigators and prosecutors in Kosovo can report crimes to the database.<sup>27</sup>

Figures 5.2 through 5.5 show time trends in selected crime rates from 2000 to 2010 for each region of Kosovo. The measures

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>26</sup> Interviews with KPS officers, Prishtinë/Priština, June 2011.
<sup>27</sup> Interviews with KPS officers, Prishtinë/Priština, June 2011.

of crime used in the following analyses are murder, aggravated assault, arson, and IED attacks.<sup>28</sup> The rates are constructed using population figures from the 2011 census supplemented with minority population estimates from the OSCE.

Murder in post-war Kosovo was highest at the beginning of the peace period (1999 to 2000) and declined in all regions until about 2003 to 2006, when the rate stabilized between .05 to .20 per 1000 residents. (By comparison, Oakland, California, a relatively high crime city, reported a murder rate of .211 per 1000 residents in 2014.) Pejë/Peć and Mitrovicë/Mitrovica regions saw consistently high rate across the time period. (These regions also saw the heaviest fighting during the war. Mitrovicë/Mitrovica region is home to the largest Kosovo-Serb communities.) The capital's region saw the highest murder rates in 2000, but saw the sharpest declines in 2001 and 2002. The southern region of Prizreni/Prizren-the furthest from the boundary with Serbia proper-had consistently low rates since 2002.

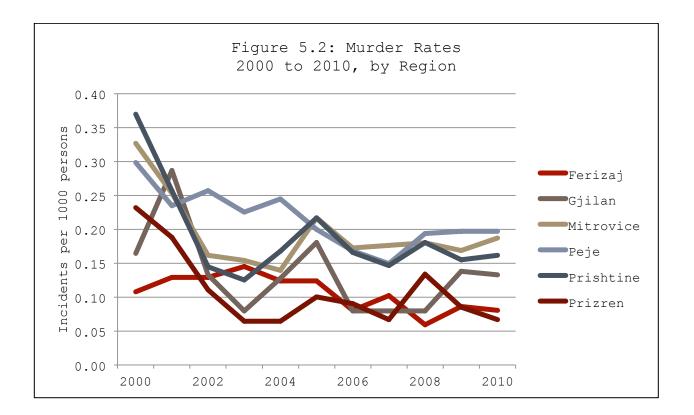
Aggravated assault rates show less significant time trends, and the regions are grouped over time from about .10 to .30 per 1000 residents. Aggravated assaults trend upward over the period. Notably Pejë/Peć experienced a large spike in the aggravated assault rate in 2002, 2003, and 2004.

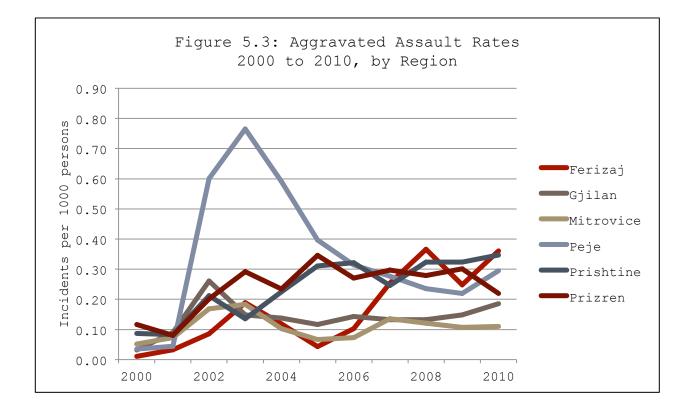
Arson rates vary quite dramatically over time and across regions. Arson and IEDs were a weapon of intimidation against Kosovo-Serbs and the international mission; they were also a tool of organized criminals. <sup>29</sup> Kosovo-Albanian nationalists targeted Serb property, Orthodox churches, and international facilities during times of political tension. Arson spikes

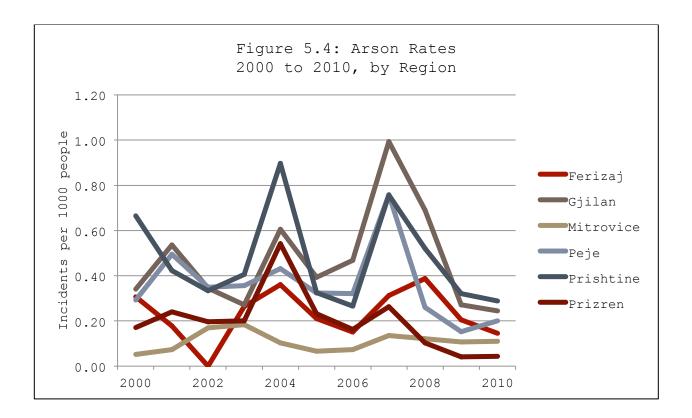
<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>28</sup> The term "Improvised Explosive Device" (IED) is not used in KPIS; it reports grenade/mine/explosive attacks.
<sup>29</sup> Interviews with UN officials, Prishtinë/Priština, July 2005.

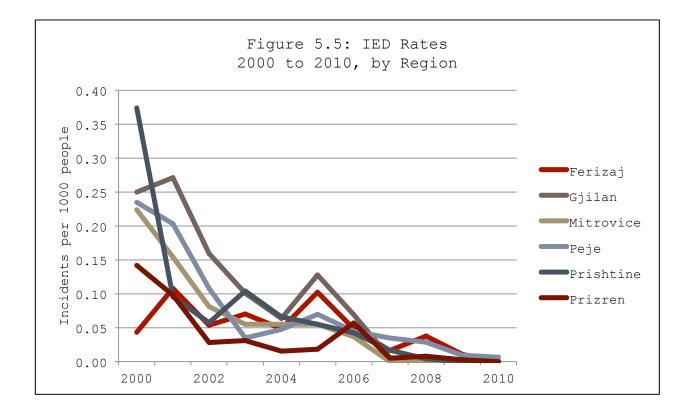
across all regions during the two major political and security crises in post-war Kosovo: province-wide riots in 2004, and the unsuccessful final-status negotiations in 2007, leading to Kosovo's unilateral declaration of independence in 2008. Arson rates declined precipitously after 2008, and seem to be headed to historic lows at the end of the time series. Though also a tool of intimidation, IED rates show rapid declines in all regions. By 2010, their rate of use had approached zero.

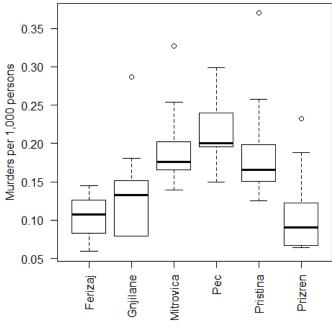
The box plots in Figures 5.6 through 5.9 show that crime rates across regions have generally comparable medians and the data are generally compact. There are relatively few outliers and the data are relativly unskewed, especially considering the time trends discussed. None of the regions are so different as to warrant dropping them from the analysis.











# MURDER RATES BY REGION

Figure 5.6

## AGGRAVATED ASSAULT RATES BY REGION

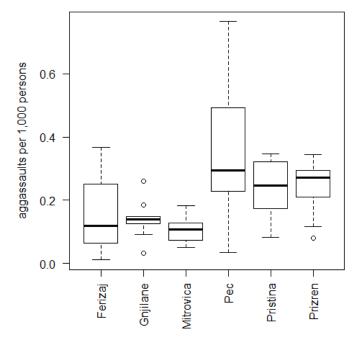
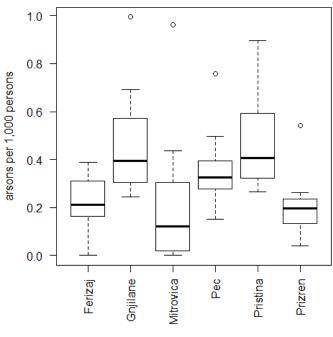


Figure 5.7



# ARSON RATES BY REGION

Figure 5.8

IED RATES BY REGION

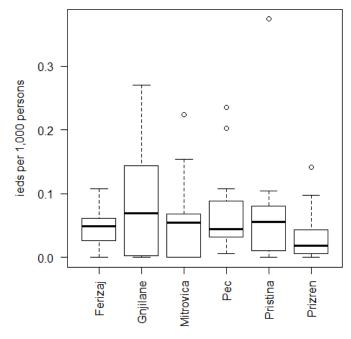


Figure 5.9

Selecting these four major, violent crimes for the empirical analysis has several advantages. The primary advantage is minimizing measurement error, especially measurement inconsistencies that might vary across time and space. First, the popular and administrative conception of these four crimes is unlikely to have shifted over time or across regions in Kosovo. A murder is a murder, and arson is arson, whether in Prizreni/Prizren in 2000 or Mitrovicë/Mitrovica in 2010. Second, these crimes are difficult to miss-or to conceal. There is less ambiguity, when these crimes are reported, that a crime has in fact occurred, even if the perpetrators are unknown. Murders, aggravated assaults, arsons, grenade attacks, and so forth are far more observable and verifiable than other reported crimes in the KPIS database, such as property crime, harassment and intimidation, sex crimes, or domestic violence. International personnel, the media, neighbors, and other witnesses are all more likely to notice a major, violent crime than property crimes, sex crimes, or domestic violence. Figures for these four crimes are at less risk of underreporting and false reporting, and therefore are less likely to be biased in some unobservable way.

Murder is generally believed to be the most consistently reported crime statistic (Fajnzylber, et al. 2002). Murders are often very public crimes (such as assassinations or spree killings), local media generally report murders (which is true in Kosovo), and aggrieved family members, friends, and coworkers form a natural constituency to demand an investigation. While the police may not "get their man," we can reasonably rely on them and the public to report the crime-- even when the murder involves organized crime, political corruption, or "acceptable" inter-ethnic violence. Aggravated assault, arson, and IED

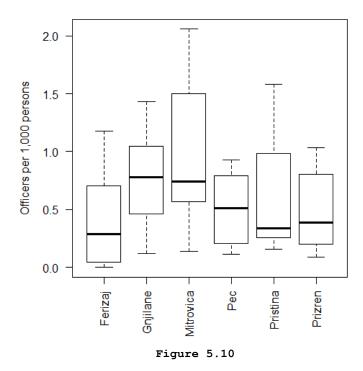
-186-

attacks likely suffer from a greater degree of misreporting, though not, I believe, enough to preclude their use. In general, we should have the greatest confidence in results from the regressions with murder rates.

## MEASURING POLICE PRESENCE

Contemporary reports and press releases from the UN, NATO, and OSCE provided figures for UNMIK and KPS officer deployments in each region of Kosovo, at the main headquarters in Pristina, The and on the borders. regional directorates are Ferizaj/Uroševac, Gjilan/Gnjilane, Mitrovicë/Mitrovica, Pejë/Peć, Prishtinë/Priština, and Prizreni/Prizren. The personnel figures in each region are from the 15 June report in each year, or the nearest date to 15 June that I can locate. Using annual figures, rather than monthly figures, masks some variability in the data. The variability of regional personnel levels within a given year is, broadly speaking, from three sources. First, there is generally an overall increase in KPS personnel within each year, as new police academy classes graduate and are deployed to each region. Second, UNMIK police are frequently rotated in and out of country, and their numbers move dynamically across the year. Third, UNMIK police are shifted among the regions during the year, presumably for public safety or training purposes. These within-year changes are relatively small, however, compared to the overall trends of deployment figures in each region.

# UNMIK PRESENCE BY REGION



**KPS PRESENCE BY REGION** 

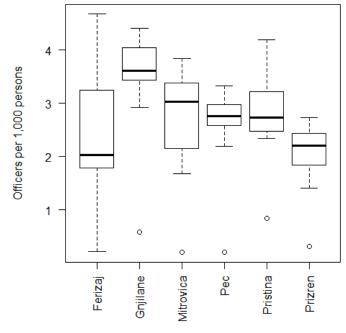


Figure 5.11

Table 1: Economic, Social, and Geographic Statistics for Regional Police Directorates in Kosovo

Police Directorate	Population (2011)	Percent Kosovo-Serb	Ethnic Fract.	Poverty Rate (2003/4)	Percent Forested	Max. Elevation	Per Cap. GDP (2004)	Gini Coef. (2004)	Literacy Rate (2004)
Ferizaj/Uroševac	185,695	0.02	0.09	0.50	0.46	1,723	1007.39	30.78	0.96
Gjilan/Gnjilane	188,188	0.06	0.14	0.33	0.41	1,263	1150.66	34.71	0.93
Mitrovicë/Mitrovica	272,268	0.26	0.42	0.59	0.46	2,017	987.40	40.16	0.96
Pejë/Peć	314,894	0.00	0.12	0.38	0.45	2,656	1037.46	33.73	0.94
Prishtinë/Priština	470,583	0.02	0.10	0.34	0.39	1,260	1167.35	36.32	0.94
Prizreni/Prizren	387,828	0.00	0.25	0.48	0.34	2,610	924.78	37.00	0.93

Sources: Kosovo Statistics Agency, UNDP Kosovo Human Development Report 2004, World Bank, OSCE.

## MEASURING ECONOMIC, GEOGRAPHIC, AND SOCIAL CORRELATES OF CRIME

Based on existing models of peacebuilding and of crime, I collected data on a variety of social, economic, and geographic factors for each region of Kosovo. To examine ethnic or social determinants post-war violent crime, I constructed ethnolinguistic fractionalization scores for each region using census data from 2011, supplemented with estimates from the OSCE. As an alternate specification, I recorded the proportion of Kosovo-Serbs in each province. To capture the presence of rugged terrain, I recorded the highest peak in each region as reported in the "Great Yugoslavian Atlas" published in Zagreb in 1988. I calculated the proportion of forested land in each region as reported by the Kosovo Statistics Agency (KSA 2009). There are no annual figures for GDP at the regional level, but there are poverty figures for 2000, 2003, 2004, 2005, 2006, and 2009 from the Kosovo Statistics Agency and the World Bank.

Table 1 gives these figures by region, and also includes, for illustrative purposes, data on GDP per capita, literacy rates, and Gini coefficients from the Kosovo Human Development Report (2004). Note that the data in this analysis is both timevariant (crime, police deployment, poverty) and time-invariant (ethnic heterogeneity, forests, elevation).

## TIME-SERIES--CROSS-SECTION REGRESSIONS WITH CRIME DATA

Regressing crime data on economic, social, and security indicators presents statistical and interpretive challenges, particularly with time-series--cross-section (TSCS) techniques utilized in this chapter. The statistical challenges are twofold. First, there is a risk of finding spurious relationships due to autoregression. While in the long run we might expect to see crime rates change dramatically, in annual intervals, crime is "sticky:" a good predictor of an annual crime rate is the previous year's crime rate (Fajnzylber 2002; Wooldridge 2003). Second, the error terms may correlate across time or cluster by region, violating Gauss-Markov assumptions. If error terms are serially or spatially correlated, the standard errors will be inaccurate and the t-statistics inflated. In this situation, OLS estimators are no longer the best linear unbiased estimators. The presence of autocorrelation will introduce bias and inconsistency, rendering statistical tests invalid (Wooldridge 2003).

Beyond the statistical challenges of time-series--crosssection regressions, the interpretive challenges of regressing crime data are significant. The central difficulty of using econometric methods to isolate the independent effect of police presence (or other interventions) on crime rates is endogeneity due to causal simultaneity. Crime rates and police presence are codetermined: communities hire and deploy police officers based (in part) on crime rates, yet the presence or absence of police should also (in part) determine crime levels. Each causes the other. Indeed, most independent variables introduced in both and civil war regressions-- economic growth crime and development, demographic indicators, the presence of peacekeeping missions -- are codetermined with the dependent

variables. For example, crime rates influence investment decisions and therefore economic growth, while simultaneously poverty and unemployment are thought drive crime rates. In the next section I review the methods I used to address these issues.

## PATTERNS OF POLICE DEPLOYMENTS IN KOSOVO

One of the advantages of micro-level or single-case studies is the potential contribution of detailed case knowledge to hypothesis testing-- contributions that would be infeasible in truly large-N, cross-national TSCS studies. It would be grossly inappropriate, for example, to attribute a universal driver of worldwide police deployments, and their causal relationship to crime rates. Indeed, there might be multiple explanations across the observed units (equifinality). Conversely, detailed field research is able to offer some insights on single cases, like post-war Kosovo.

Looking at monthly deployment data between 1999 and 2008, I find it relatively clear that UNMIK assigned newly-trained KPSS graduates based on a population formula, rather than anv evaluation of crime rates. New officers graduating from the academy were deployed in constant proportion to the population in each district; once deployed officers were rarely reassigned (in large numbers) between the regions. KPS deployments in each region are virtually unchanged across most months. The number of officers assigned to each region changes almost exclusively when a new officer class graduates from the police academy in Vushtrri/Vučitrn. (Figure 5.1 above gave the annual graduation totals.) In other words, changes in KPS officer presence occur mostly when new classes graduate; and graduating officers are primarily assigned to regions in proportion to the regional

-191-

population. I believe that KPS officer deployments are therefore exogenous to crime rates.

The patterns of UNMIK police deployments are less clear: the number of UNMIK officers in each region often shifts significantly from month to month with no obvious relationship to, for example, the schedule of in-country rotations. I suspect that marginal changes in police presence are likely due to intelligence and public safety concerns. Thus interpreting any significant coefficient on UNMIK police presence is more difficult.

## MODELS AND RESULTS

First, I use methods reviewed by Beck (2008) to address the statistical challenges discussed above. To test for autoregression, serial correlation, and spatial correlation, I utilize the battery of procedures in Croissant and Millo (2008).<sup>30</sup> The general form of the linear model is:

```
Crime Rate<sub>i,t</sub> = \beta_1 UNMIK_{i,t} + \beta_2 KPS_{i,t} + \beta_3 Poverty_{i,t} + \beta_4 Geography_i + \beta_5 Ethnicity_i + u_{i,t}
```

Crime rate takes on four values; geography and ethnicity two each, all of which are time invariant. This gives us 16 specifications to test using Crossaint and Millo's "plm" package in R. For specifications with murder and IED attack rates, there is little evidence of autocorrelation, or serial or spatial correlation of the error terms. For specifications with aggravated assault and arson rates, there is strong evidence of autocorrelation of the error terms; as a result, I introduce a lagged dependent variable for these regressions.

Tables 2 through 5 report the linear regression results of a fixed effect model, random effect models, and random coefficient models for each dependent variable.<sup>31</sup> I do not report the intercepts. The aggravated assault and arson regression tables report the lagged dependent variables.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>30</sup> Namely, the Breusch-Pagan Lagrange Multiplier Test, Durbin-Watson test for serial correlation in panel models, Breusch-Godfrey/Woodridge test for serial correlation in panel models, Wooldridge's test for serial correlation in FE models, and the Pesaran CD test for crosssectional dependence in panels.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>31</sup> In all cases I used multiple imputation to account for missing data. The process used for multiple imputation for time-series--cross-section data was introduced by Honaker and King (2010). All imputations and statistics were computed in R.

#### Table 2: Murder Rate Regression Results

Dependent	Variable:	Murder	Rates

		FE		RE	,	1		RC	,	
Independent variab	les		II	III	IV	V	VI	VII	VIII	IX
UNMIK		0.030*	0.035**	0.035**	0.034**	0.035**	0.033	0.033	0.032	0.033
	SE	0.017	0.017	0.016	0.017	0.016	0.016	0.016	0.016	0.016
KPS		-0.019**	018**	-0.018**	018**	-0.018**	-0.018	-0.019	-0.019	-0.019
	SE	0.008	0.008	0.008	0.008	0.008	0.008	0.008	0.008	0.008
Poverty Rate		0.101	0.093	0.087	0.089	0.084	0.097	0.093	0.095	0.091
	SE	0.061	0.061	0.061	0.061	0.061	0.060	0.060	0.060	0.060
Elevation			0.000		0.000		0.000		0.000	
	SE		0.000		0.000		0.000		0.000	
Forested Area				0.274		0.271		0.271		0.264
	SE			0.424		0.470		0.557		0.625
ELF			-0.037	-0.046			-0.034	-0.047		
	SE		0.172	0.162			0.233	0.213		
Percent Serb					0.051	-0.003			0.052	-0.001
	SE				0.208	0.229			0.280	0.302
Observations		66	66	66	66	66	66	66	66	66
R-squared		0.448	0.424	0.428	0.424	0.427				

#### Notes

\* significant at the 10 pct. level; \*\* significant at the 5 pct. level; \*\*\* significant at the 1 pct. level. First differenced model found only UNMIK significant, again positively correlated with murder rates (coef. = .054). Random Coefficients Models fit by REML.

Random Coefficients Models do not report p values because there is some debate over how to interpret them. There is also no conventional way to report a goodness-of-fit statistics akin to an R-squared statistic.

			Dependent	Variable:	Aggravated	Assault	Rates		
	FE	ĺ	R	E	RC				
Independent variabl	es I	II	III	IV	V	VI	VII	VIII	IX
lAggAssault	0.067 SE 0.071	0.062	0.048 0.072	0.063 0.070	0.047	0.056 0.070	0.056 0.071	0.060 <i>0.070</i>	0.052 0.071
UNMIK	0.076 E 0.048	0.068 0.045	0.470 <i>0.046</i>	0.067 <i>0.046</i>	0.053 <i>0.046</i>	0.058 0.044	0.058 <i>0.046</i>	0.059 0.045	0.059 0.046
KPS	0.041 SE 0.031	0.037 <i>0.029</i>	0.024 0.030	0.037 <i>0.030</i>	0.028 0.030	0.033 <i>0.029</i>	0.031 <i>0.030</i>	0.035 <i>0.030</i>	0.031 <i>0.030</i>
Poverty Rate	-0.583*** E 0.171	-0.5486*** 0.162	-0.523*** 0.170	05472*** 0.164	-0.515*** 0.168	-0.506 <i>0.157</i>	-0.546 <i>0.169</i>	-0.517 <i>0.162</i>	-0.533 <i>0.167</i>
Elevation	E	.000** 0.000		0.000* <i>0.000</i>		0.000 <i>0.000</i>		0.000 <i>0.000</i>	
Forested Area	E		0.231 <i>1.169</i>		0.755 1.280		0.234 1.508		0.771 1.503
ELF	E	-0.391 <i>0.452</i>	-0.101 <i>0.393</i>			-0.395 <i>0.296</i>	-0.094 <i>0.575</i>		
Percent Serb	E			-0.360 0.550	-0.609 <i>0.621</i>			-0.366 <i>0.406</i>	-0.615 <i>0.727</i>
Observations	60	60	60	60	60	60	60	60	60
R-squared	0.250	0.264	0.206	0.259	0.220				

# Table 3: Aggravated Assault Rate Regression Results Perendent Variable: Aggravated Assault Rat

#### Notes

\* significant at the 10 pct. level; \*\* significant at the 5 pct. level; \*\*\* significant at the 1 pct. level. A first-differenced model also found poverty significant, negatively correlated outcome (coef. = -.737). Random Coefficients Models fit by REML.

Random Coefficients Models do not report p values because there is some debate over how to interpret them. There is also no conventional way to report a goodness-of-fit statistics akin to an R-squared statistic.

#### Table 4: Arson Rate Regression Results

Dependent Variable: Arson Rates

-									
	FE		RE				RO		
Independent variables	I	II	III	IV	V	VI	VII	VIII	IX
lArson	0.192	0.192	0.140	0.204	0.106	0.219	0.155	0.250	0.092
SE	0.254	0.244	0.225	0.312	0.230	0.236	0.201	0.234	0.219
UNMIK	0.154	0.196**	0.213***	0.198**	0.223***	0.233	0.251	0.238	0.249
SE	0.094	0.083	0.078	0.083	0.081	0.074	0.070	0.075	0.077
KPS	0.028	0.044	0.062	0.050	0.068	0.053	0.081	0.069	0.082
SE	0.062	0.055	0.052	0.056	0.055	0.047	0.048	0.051	0.053
Poverty Rate	0.137	-0.017	-0.007	0.028	-0.091	-0.146	-0.081	-0.044	-0.174
SE	0.351	0.303	0.319	0.312	0.314	0.257	0.308	0.279	0.030
Elevation		-0.000		-0.000		-0.000		-0.000	
SE		0.000		0.000		0.000		0.000	
Forested Area			-0.439		0.164		-0.418		0.244
SE			1.125		1.211		0.764		0.910
ELF		-0.568	-0.669			-0.556	-0.658		
SE		0.448	0.417			0.292	0.271		
Percent Serb				-0.690	-0.713			-0.706	-0.752
SE				0.562	0.606			0.391	0.467
Observations	60	60	60	60	60	60	60	60	60
R-squared	0.079	0.152	0.150	0.151	0.140				

#### Notes

\* significant at the 10 pct. level; \*\* significant at the 5 pct. level; \*\*\* significant at the 1 pct. level. First differenced model found no significant coefficients.

Random Coefficients Models fit by REML. Random Coefficients Models do not report p values because there is some debate over how to interpret them.

There is also no conventional way to report a goodness-of-fit statistics akin to an R-squared statistic.

Dependent Variable: IED Rates

				-						
	FE	RE RC								
Independent variables		I	II	III	IV	V	VI	VII	VIII	IX
UNMIK	SE	0.044** 0.017	0.049*** <i>0.017</i>	0.052*** <i>0.017</i>	0.049*** 0.017	0.052*** 0.017	0.049 <i>0.017</i>	0.051 <i>0.017</i>	0.049 <i>0.017</i>	0.049 <i>0.017</i>
KPS	SE	-0.033*** 0.008	-0.032*** 0.008	-0.031*** 0.008	-0.032*** 0.008	-0.031*** 0.008	-0.032 <i>0.008</i>	-0.031 <i>0.008</i>	-0.032 <i>0.008</i>	-0.031 <i>0.008</i>
Poverty Rate	SE	0.260*** <i>0.063</i>	0.243*** <i>0.062</i>	0.239*** <i>0.062</i>	0.244*** <i>0.062</i>	0.231*** <i>0.063</i>	0.240 <i>0.062</i>	0.242 <i>0.062</i>	0.243 <i>0.062</i>	0.242 <i>0.062</i>
Elevation	SE		0.000 <i>0.000</i>		0.000 <i>0.000</i>		0.000 <i>0.000</i>		0.000 <i>0.000</i>	
Forested Area	SE			-0.111 <i>0.478</i>		0.028 <i>0.537</i>		-0.112 0.508		0.018 <i>0.673</i>
ELF	SE		-0.193 <i>0.192</i>	-0.252 0.183			-0.194 <i>0.178</i>	-0.252 0.194		
Percent Serb	SE				-0.220 0.231	-0.193 <i>0.261</i>			-0.220 0.220	-0.190 <i>0.326</i>
Observations		66	66	66	66	66	66	66	66	66
R-squared		0.711	0.699	0.694	0.698	0.687				

## Table 5: IED Rate Regression Results

## Notes

\* significant at the 10 pct. level; \*\* significant at the 5 pct. level; \*\*\* significant at the 1 pct. level. First differenced model found only KPS and poverty marginally significant. KPS coefficient

was -.019; poverty was .101. R-squared was only .091.

Random Coefficients Models fit by REML.

Random Coefficients Models do not report p values because there is some debate over how to interpret them. There is also no conventional way to report a goodness-of-fit statistics akin to an R-squared statistic.

## RESULTS

Murder. Police presence had a large and statistically significant correlation with murder rates in post-war Kosovo. For each additional percentage point of UNMIK police officers per 1,000 residents, a region saw on average an additional .030 to .035 murders per 1,000 residents. At the low end, this translates to an additional six to seven murders annually in Ferizaj/Uroševac (the least populous region). At the high end, this translates to an additional 14 to 16 murders annually in Prishtinë/Priština (the most populous region).

For each additional percentage point of KPS police officers per 1,000 residents, a region saw on average .018 to .019 <u>fewer</u> murders per 1,000 residents. This translates to three or four fewer murders annually in Ferizaj/Uroševac (the least populous region) and eight or nine fewer murders annually in Prishtinë/Priština (the most populous region).

These models explain approximately 42 to 45 percent of the variation in the data.

Aggravated Assault. At the margin, changes in UNMIK police deployments were not correlated with changes in the aggravated assault rate. I find no evidence that marginal redeployments of UNMIK police had any effect on aggravated assault rates. Furthermore, I do not find any association between KPS officer deployments and aggravated assault at the margin.

Poverty rates have a large and unexpectedly inverse relationship with aggravated assault rates. For each additional percentage point in poverty rates, a region on average saw .506 to .583 <u>fewer</u> aggravated assaults per 1,000 residents. At the low end, this translates to 94 to 108 fewer aggravated assaults annually in Ferizaj/Uroševac (the least populous region). At the

-196-

high end, this translates to 238 to 274 fewer aggravated assaults annually in Prishtinë/Priština (the most populous region).

The aggravated assault models perform slightly worse than the murder models, explaining between roughly 21 to 26 percent of the variation in the data.

**Arson.** UNMIK police deployments had a strong and statistically significant correlation to arson rates. Each additional percentage point of UNMIK police officers per 1,000 residents was associated with an additional .196 to .251 arsons per 1,000 residents. At the low end, this translates to an additional 36 to 47 reported arsons per year in Ferizaj/Uroševac (the least populous region). At the high end, this translates to an additional 92 to 118 arsons per year in Prishtinë/Priština (the most populous region).

No other indicators have a statistically significant relationship with arson rates, including, surprisingly, measures of ethnic diversity. The models perform relatively poorly, explaining between roughly 9 and 16 percent of the variation in the data.

**IED Attacks.** Each additional percentage point of UNMIK police officers per 1,000 residents is associated with an additional .044 to .052 IED attacks per 1,000 residents in a region. At the low end, this translates to an additional eight to 10 IED attacks annually in Ferizaj/Uroševac (the least populous region). At the high end, this translates to an additional 21 to 24 IED attacks annually in Prishtinë/Priština (the most populous region).

For each additional percentage point of KPS police officers per 1,000 residents, a region on average saw .031 to .033 fewer

-197-

IED attacks per 1,000 residents. At the low end, this translates to six fewer IED assaults annually in Ferizaj/Uroševac (the least populous region). At the high end, this translates to 15 to 16 fewer IED attacks annually in Prishtinë/Priština (the most populous region).

For each additional percentage point in poverty rates, a region on average saw an additional .231 to .260 IED attacks per 1,000 residents. At the low end, this translates to an additional 43 to 48 IED attacks annually in Ferizaj/Uroševac (the least populous region). At the high end, this translates to an additional 109 to 122 IED attacks annually in Prishtinë/Priština (the most populous region).

The IED models perform well, explaining between 69 and 72 percent of the variation in the data.

## THE DETERMINANTS OF VIOLENT CRIME IN POST-WAR KOSOVO

## POLICE PRESENCE IS A SIGNIFICANT PREDICTOR OF CRIME RATES

Keeping in mind the interpretive difficulties discussed earlier, it seems nonetheless clear that the presence of both UNMIK and KPS police personnel is significantly correlated to violent crime rates in post-war Kosovo. UNMIK presence has statistically significant associations with murder rates, arson rates, and IED attack rates; there was no correlation with aggravated assault. KPS presence correlated with murder rates and IED attack rates. In every case, UNMIK presence had a more sizeable correlation with crime rates than KPS presence. There is an interpretive puzzle however: the signs of UNMIK's coefficients are positive (UNMIK is associated with greater crime), while KPS's are negative (KPS is associated with lower crime).

We need to understand the case history to interpret these results. As discussed in the previous sections, UNMIK officers were deployed over time in patterns suggesting a possible relationship to local intelligence and public safety concerns. But were they? An understanding of the history of post-war Kosovo allows us to reject alternative hypotheses. The first alternative hypothesis is that marginal increases in UNMIK presence caused a jump in crime rates; crime was lower in areas with marginally fewer UNMIK police. Globally, peacekeepers have often been accused of major crimes, most notoriously during the ECOMOG mission to Liberia, which saw its forces loot the country during the deployment from 1989 to 1996. Peacekeepers in Bosnia and Kosovo were credibly accused of participation in sex trafficking. However, there is little indication from published sources or from my field work that international police were a

-199-

significant source of major violent crime in Kosovo, for example murders, grievous assaults, arsons, or IED attacks.

The second alternative hypothesis is that an increased presence of UNMIK officers simply led to an increase in crimes reported, perhaps because they were more vigorous in their police work. If this is true, then the coefficients reflect an increase in crime reporting rather than an actual increase in crime. This interpretive difficulty is present in all crime regressions based on reported crime. (The major alternative research strategy-- to use survey methods that attempt to measure citizens' perception of crime-- presents its own interpretive challenges.) As noted above, I selected crime rates to investigate based on their heightened violence and public nature, therefore minimizing the difference between reported crime and actual crime. For the most violent crimes, such as murder and grievous assault, I believe reported crimes are virtually identical to actual crimes in Kosovo; therefore we can reject this alternative hypothesis.

The regression results confirm the intuition that marginal changes in regional UNMIK police presence were reactions to changes in major crime rates.

The second, more interesting finding is that deployments of the Kosovo Police Service had a significant downward effect on murder rates and IED attack rates. KPS deployments did not have any correlation to arson rates and aggravated assault rates. Here too, case study knowledge is crucial to understanding the causal pattern. KPS deployments to each region were apparently based on regional population, not regional crime rates: I argue that KPS presence is exogenous to crime patterns in post-war Kosovo. As a result, there is not an interpretive challenge from joint causality: the causal arrow goes directly from KPS presence to crime rates. At the margin, regional increases in

-200-

KPS presence significantly reduced murder rates and IED attack rates. This quantitative analysis therefore confirms previous, qualitative assessments that the KPS was an effective post-war institution-building enterprise.

## POVERTY DOES NOT PREDICT MURDER, ARSON; DOES PREDICT AGGRAVATED ASSAULT, IEDS

the central findings of the civil One of war and peacebuilding literatures is that civil conflict is a problem of poor countries, and that wealthier post-war countries rarely relapse back into civil war. Poverty rates in Kosovo were only partial predictors of civil peace, at least as far as major violent crime is concerned. Murder and arson were not associated with poverty rates, while aggravated assaults and IED attacks were. The latter results are somewhat contradictory. For the aggravated assault regressions, the sign of the coefficient on poverty was positive, while in the arson regressions, the sign was negative. The effect size is also quite large in both cases.

It is possible there is a confounding variable at work here. It is possible, for example, that there is an urban-rural dynamic that is not accounted for by the data I have collected (e.g. perhaps aggravated assault is an urban phenomenon and IED attacks a rural one). We must mark this down as an area for future research.

The equivocal findings on poverty suggest that there are distinct data generating processes for violent crime and for conflict recurrence. Poverty's close relationship to civil war is the most robust finding in the civil war research program. In other words, different factors determine post-war social violence (crime) than post-war political violence (war). If so, the post-war economic policies designed to address political

-201-

violence by mitigating poverty should not also be expected to reduce crime levels.

## GEOGRAPHY DOES NOT PREDICT CRIME RATES

Geography is another important factor driving patterns of civil conflict, but it was not a factor driving violent crime rates in post-war Kosovo. Geographic factors are thought to increase the likelihood of civil conflict by making guerrilla warfare tactics easier to implement (e.g. Galula 1964, Fearon and Laitin 2003). Rugged terrain such as forests, jungles, and mountains make it easier for insurgent groups to hide from numerically and technologically superior security forces. This terrain advantage seems not to have any effect on crime rates in Kosovo: measures for both forests and mountainous terrain are not correlated with violent crime rates. Even in a post-war society where organized crime was endemic, terrain advantages apparently had little to no effect on crime patterns. Violent crime, even organized violent crime, may be driven more by social terrain: for example, the presence of clan networks and large diasporas is often cited to explain patterns of crime in Kosovo and the rest of the Balkans.

## SOCIAL HETEROGENEITY DOES NOT PREDICT CRIME RATES

Post-war planning was deeply concerned with violence among ethnic groups in Kosovo, and, indeed, there were significant episodes of communal conflict, including mass demonstrations and targeted terrorist attacks. The results here suggest, however, that post-war policies to prevent ethnic violence were apparently successful: neither ethnolinguistic fractionalization scores nor measures of the Serb population are good predictors of crime rates in post-war Kosovo. This is not due to the absence of cross-ethnic crime; such crime has been a constant feature of Kosovo society since 1999, especially at the outset of the post-war period. Yet post-war policies were apparently effective at keeping cross-ethnic violent crime in relative proportion to the demographics of each region, holding all else constant.

## CONCLUSION

Linear regression analyses test how marginal changes in independent variables change the outcome of interest. This chapter tested how differences in policing deployment, poverty ethnic makeup, and geography independently influence rates, violent crime rates in post-war Kosovo. It cannot tell us what would happen if UNMIK police had never deployed, or if UNMIK had withdrawn from Kosovo completely in, say, 2004. Those changes would almost certainly have caused violent crime to spike, thought it would have been difficult to measure without adequate police. It is therefore important not to lose sight of the overall context of security and institution building in Kosovo. As noted, Kosovo is an extreme case: in comparison to many other post-war peacebuilding efforts, Kosovo had (in practice) almost unlimited financial and programmatic resources from international actors. Early on, the UN, U.S., and E.U. decided that they could not afford to botch the recovery-- for security and reputational reasons. Since this mission, the deployment of international police in post-war settings has seemingly diminished. If "policekeepers" are deployed at all, they are sent to small countries like Sierra Leone and Liberia. The U.S. failed to deploy any "policekeepers" to post-war Iraq; the U.S. and NATO have deployed very few to Afghanistan (relative to Kosovo's per capita deployment).

Yet from a policing perspective, the Kosovo framework was clear. Intensive peacebuilding, large development assistance, large numbers of peacekeeping troops, holding early elections, quickly establishing local political institutions-- these policy decisions created a context that allowed the international policing regime to have clear successes. International police

-204-

deployment, lengthy training, joint patrols, careful oversight, and phased transitions, I find, created a local police force that was effective at deterring, at minimum, murders and IED attacks—and possibly other violent and property crimes.

chapter qualitative This puts numbers on earlier evaluations that praised the formation of the Kosovo Police Service. For each additional percentage point of KPS police officers per 1,000 residents, a region saw on average .018 to .019 fewer murders per 1,000 residents. This translates to three or four fewer murders annually in Ferizaj/Uroševac (the least populous region) and eight or nine fewer murders annually in populous Prishtinë/Priština (the most region). These are significant effects, not just for the victims, but also for the creation of political order in a divided society emerging from a civil war.

This chapter undertook a within-country test of theories of crime, of civil war recurrence, and of peacebuilding. It challenges theories that put emphasis on ethnic, geographic, and poverty factors. The results instead point to security sector explanations of crime, civil war recurrence, and peacebuilding. It confirms cross-national findings that identify police as a key determinant of crime rates (e.g. Fajnzylber et al. 2002). It also lends support to arguments I have developed in the other chapters: that the institutional and security architecture of a post-war society better explains peacebuilding success than economic or social factors. This analysis thus points to the crucial importance of the new, international focus on security sector reform on reducing both social and political violence.

## CONCLUSION

This dissertation has presented detailed analyses of peacebuilding and postwar recovery in the contemporary era. It has challenged core tenets of the "institutional peacebuilding consensus"-in particular that economic recovery, democratization, communal reconciliation, and third party interventions are sufficient to explain the consolidation of peace after civil war. Instead, my analysis points to the institutional and military architectures of postwar societies driving, in large part, the emergence of a durable peace and the avoidance of war relapse. It has also exposed some gaps that future research can profitably address and thereby improve our understanding of these processes.

#### BETTER QUANTIFICATION OF SECURITY VARIABLES

Security sector reform, DDR, military integration and fragmentation, and the presence of non-UN troops have all resisted easy quantification and are therefore commonly excluded from large-N comparative work. An emerging international consensus around the importance of security sector reform should improve efforts at measurement. Developing continuous and timevariant measures of those policies will aid investigation about their relative importance among other post-war policies.

### DEVELOPING CASE STUDIES ON SECURITY REFORMS IN CONFLICT-AFFLICTED COUNTRIES

Much of our knowledge of security-related reforms are drawn from political transition in Latin America, Southern Europe, and Eastern Europe. As a result, our knowledge is quite detailed on

-206-

transition and reforms in countries at peace. There are far fewer case studies and far less comparative work on security sector reforms in conflict-afflicted countries. Such countries almost certainly face distinctive challenges of reform.

#### RESEARCH ON CONFLICT IN THE MIDDLE EAST, NORTH AND EAST AFRICA, AND THE SAHEL

While civil war has touched all regions of the world, the most dangerous and destructive conflicts are currently ongoing in the Middle East, North African, and East African regions. Compared to other regions of the world, the MENA region experienced fewer civil wars until the ill-fated U.S. invasion of Iraq in 2003, and the Arab Uprisings that began in 2011. The Arab region is distinctive in a number of ways-- for example, governance, political economy, and civil society-- that make comparisons with previous civil war experiences difficult. Perhaps the best comparison cases are immediately to the south the Sahara desert and in East Africa. Academics and of practitioners working on conflict resolution and peacebuilding should produce high-quality research to draw lessons from many of the lesser-known historical conflicts from these regions: among them Chad, Ethiopia, Mali, Somalia, Sudan, Uganda, and Yemen.

Peacebuilding Approach	Specific Policy	Hypothesized Effect on Peace	Representative Citations or Cases
	-	Separates combatants, provides	Paris (2004); Doyle and
		information, reduces risk of	Sambanis (2006); Fortn
Peacekeeping	Deploy a UN monitoring mission	accidents, improves coordination	(2008)
		Separates combatants, provides	Paris (2004); Doyle and
		information, reduces risk of	Sambanis (2006); Fortn
Peacekeeping	Deploy a UN peacekeeping mission	accidents, improves coordination	(2008)
		Addresses causes of conflict,	
		transforms society, (re)builds	Paris (2004); Doyle an
		institutions to mitigate risk of	Sambanis (2006); Fortn
Peacekeeping	Deploy a UN complex peacebuilding mission	conflict	(2008)
		Separates combatants, provides	Paris (2004); Doyle an
		information, reduces risk of	Sambanis (2006); Fortn
Peacekeeping	Deploy other 3d party monitoring mission	accidents, improves coordination	(2008)
		Separates combatants, provides	Paris (2004); Doyle an
	Deploy other 3d party peacekeeping	information, reduces risk of	Sambanis (2006); Fortn
Peacekeeping	mission	accidents, improves coordination	(2008)
		Addresses causes of conflict,	
		transforms society, (re)builds	Paris (2004); Doyle an
	Deploy other 3d party complex	institutions to mitigate risk of	Sambanis (2006); Fortn
Peacekeeping	peacebuilding mission	conflict	(2008)
		Directs political conflict into	
	Adopt a new, interim, or amended	peaceful channels, accommodation,	
Democratic	constitution	negotiation	Boutros-Ghali (1992)
			(1992)
Democratic	Establish a multiparty system	Democratic theory	Boutros-Ghali (1992)
2000010010	Lecapiton a matciparty system	Semeeratic encory	2000105 GHait (1992)
Democratic	Extend political rights	Democratic theory	Boutros-Chali (1902)
Democratic	Excent political rights	Democratic theory	Boutros-Ghali (1992)
Deme event i e	Hold elections	Democratic theory	Deutere (1000)
Democratic	HOLD ELECTIONS	Democratic theory	Boutros-Ghali (1992)
Democratic	Hold early elections	Democratic theory	Bosnia, Liberia
Democratic	Hold local elections first	Democratic theory	Diamond (2005)
Democratic	Strengthen political parties	Democratic theory	USAID Programs
Democratic	Strengthen political parties	Democratic theory	USAID Programs
Democratic	Strengthen political parties Strengthen the legislature internally and	Democratic theory	USAID Programs
Democratic Democratic		Democratic theory Democratic theory	USAID Programs USAID Programs
	Strengthen the legislature internally and	Democratic theory	
Democratic Democratic	Strengthen the legislature internally and		
Democratic	Strengthen the legislature internally and	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability,	
Democratic Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system,	
	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence	USAID Programs
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability,	USAID Programs
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system,	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability,	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOS	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system Establish a post-war cabinet that	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Paris (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation Participation in government	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Lijphart (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system Establish a post-war cabinet that	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation Participation in government Reduces feelings of vulnerability,	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Lijphart (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system Establish a post-war cabinet that reflects a 'grand coalition'	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation Participation in government Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system,	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Lijphart (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Power Sharing Power Sharing	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system Establish a post-war cabinet that	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation Participation in government Reduces feelings of vulnerability,	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Lijphart (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Power Sharing Power Sharing	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system Establish a post-war cabinet that reflects a 'grand coalition'	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation Participation in government Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system,	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Lijphart (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Power Sharing Power Sharing Power Sharing	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system Establish a post-war cabinet that reflects a 'grand coalition' Give communal groups a mutual veto Integrate the bureaucracy, judiciary, and	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation Participation in government Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Lijphart (2004) Lijphart (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Power Sharing Power Sharing Power Sharing Power Sharing	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system Establish a post-war cabinet that reflects a 'grand coalition'	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation Participation in government Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system,	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Lijphart (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and Civil Society Human Rights and Civil Society Power Sharing Power Sharing Power Sharing;	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system Establish a post-war cabinet that reflects a 'grand coalition' Give communal groups a mutual veto Integrate the bureaucracy, judiciary, and military	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation Participation in government Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Addresses demands for equity	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Lijphart (2004) Lijphart (2004)
Democratic Human Rights and	Strengthen the legislature internally and vis-à-vis the executive Improve civil liberties Adopt a human rights charter Improve minorities' rights, political participation, and access to services Improve women's rights, political participation, and access to services Train media; disallow hate speech Control "hate speech", Ban and demobilize extremist or nationalist groups Build a "culture of peace"; promote NGOs working across communal or factional lines Proportional representation in the electoral system Establish a post-war cabinet that reflects a 'grand coalition' Give communal groups a mutual veto Integrate the bureaucracy, judiciary, and	Democratic theory Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms, constrains government's ability to use violence Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Reduces grievances, promotes economic growth and good governance Improves governance, reduces social tensions, prevents incitement Reduces social tensions, chances of communal violence, prevents incitement Promotes social reconciliation Participation in government Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms	USAID Programs Boutros-Ghali (1992) Boutros-Ghali (1992) World Bank World Development Report (2011) World Bank World Development Report (2011) Paris (2004) Paris (2004) Lijphart (2004) Lijphart (2004)

Peacebuilding Approach	Specific Policy	Hypothesized Effect on Peace	Representative Citations or Cases		
Power Sharing	Give communal groups autonomy in their internal affairs	Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in political system, promotes liberal norms	Lijphart (2004)		
Power Sharing	Decentralize political authority	Communal groups control own affairs	Lijphart (2004)		
			Hartzell and Hoddie (2003); Mattes and		
Power Sharing	Economic power sharing	Addresses demands for equity	Savun (2010) Schulhofer-Wohl and Sambanis (2010); c.f.		
Security Sector	DDR: disarm fighters; collect and secure weapons	Reduces weapons in circulation, raises costs of remobilization	Humphreys and Weinstein (2007)		
	DDR: demobilize non-state armed groups; cantonment, demobilization orders/ceremonies, registration as veterans, geographic dispersal or return	Breaks up units, breaks down command-and-control, raises costs of	Schulhofer-Wohl and Sambanis (2010); c.f. Humphreys and Weinsteir		
Security Sector	to homeland DDR: reintegrate fighters into society;	remobilization	(2007) Schulhofer-Wohl and		
	provide pensions, education, job training, grants for small businesses or	Raises opportunity costs for joining	Sambanis (2010); c.f. Humphreys and Weinsteir		
Security Sector	farms, health services, counseling.	a new rebellion, reduces crime Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in security sector, puts constraints on the security sector, depoliticizes security	(2007)		
Security Sector	SSR: improve accountability	sector Reduces feelings of vulnerability,	OECD (2007)		
		<pre>improves trust in security sector, puts constraints on the security sector, depoliticizes security</pre>			
Security Sector	SSR: improve transparency	sector	OECD (2007)		
		Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in security sector, puts constraints on the security sector, depoliticizes security			
Security Sector	SSR: develop national security strategy	sector Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in security sector,	OECD (2007)		
Security Sector	SSR: force reduction, modernization, and professionalization	puts constraints on the security sector, depoliticizes security sector	OECD (2007)		
Security Sector		Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in security sector, puts constraints on the security			
Security Sector	SSR: improve police training, professionalism	sector, depoliticizes security sector	OECD (2007)		
	SSR: reform criminal laws, especially	Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in security sector, puts constraints on the security sector, depoliticizes security			
Security Sector	national security related laws	sector Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in security sector, puts constraints on the security	OECD (2007)		
Security Sector	SSR: reform penal system	sector, depoliticizes security sector	OECD (2007)		
		Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in security sector, allows factions to punish defection	Glassmyer and Sambanis		
Security Sector; Power Sharing	MI: integrate equal or a large number of rebels into national military or police	from peace arrangements, shared control Reduces feelings of vulnerability,	(2008); Hoddie and Hartzell (2003)		
Security Sector;	MI: establish a NSC comprising multiple	<pre>improves trust in security sector, allows factions to punish defection from peace arrangements, shared</pre>	Glassmyer and Sambanis (2008); Hoddie and		
Power Sharing	factions	control Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in security sector,	Hartzell (2003)		
Security Sector; Power Sharing	MI: appoint rebel commanders to high- ranking command positions in the national military or police	allows factions to punish defection from peace arrangements, shared control	Glassmyer and Sambanis (2008); Hoddie and Hartzell (2003)		
		Reduces feelings of vulnerability, improves trust in security sector, allows factions to punish defection	Glassmyer and Sambanis		
Security Sector; Power Sharing Economic	MI: permit factions to maintain armed forces in their territories Establish private property; enforce	from peace arrangements, shared control	(2008); Hoddie and Hartzell (2003) Doyle and Sambanis		
Liberalization Economic	property rights	Promotes economic growth	(2006)		
Liberalization Economic	Liberalize internal markets	Promotes economic growth	Mozambique		
Liberalization	Liberalize external trade	Promotes economic growth	Mozambique		
Economic Liberalization; Developmental	Land reforms or redistribution	Promotes economic growth, secures livelihoods for rural peasantry	Ethiopia		
Economic Privatization	Privatize state-owned enterprises	Promotes economic growth	Kosovo, Bosnia		

Approach	Specific Policy	Hypothesized Effect on Peace	Representative Citations or Cases		
Economic Liberalization	Reduce government payroll	Promotes economic growth	c.f. Paris (2004)		
Economic	Reduce government payroii	Findles economic growin	C.I. FAIIS (2004)		
Liberalization	Cut government program spending	Promotes economic growth Improves economic opportunities,	c.f. Paris (2004)		
Developmental	Implement public works projects	provides jobs, rewards loyalists in conflict area	Turkey, Russia		
Developmental	Receive official development assistance	Promotes economic growth	Liberia		
Developmental	Use INGOs to provide public goods	Promotes economic growth	South Sudan		
Developmental	Diaspora support; remittances	Promotes economic growth	El Salvador		
		Improves economic opportunities in conflict area, provides jobs, allows easier movement of security forces			
Developmental	Build roads into conflict zone	into conflict area Improves economic opportunities in	Afghanistan World Bank World		
Humanitarian and Basic Needs	Increase education spending	conflict zones, addresses political grievances	Development Report (2011)		
		Improves economic opportunities in	World Bank World		
Humanitarian and	Tananan kasiki ana ''	conflict zones, addresses political	Development Report		
Basic Needs	Increase health spending	grievances	(2011)		
Humanitarian and		Improves economic opportunities in conflict zones, addresses political	World Bank World Development Report		
Basic Needs	Increase social welfare spending	grievances	(2011)		
		Improves economic opportunities in			
Humanitarian and	Increase spending on rural and	conflict zones, addresses political			
Basic Needs	agricultural programs	grievances	Turkey		
Humanitarian and					
Basic Needs	Receive UNHCR, OHRA, ICRC assistance	Reduces deprivation, grievances	South Sudan		
Humanitarian and					
Basic Needs	Return IDPs and other refugees	Reduces deprivation, grievances	Rwanda, Burundi		
lliberal Economic	(Re)establish a patronage system, recruit				
Policy;	patronage networks into post-war	Develop ties between government and	Dobbins, Jones, Crane,		
Authoritarian	governing coalition	people, through local patrons	DeGrasse (2007)		
Illiberal Economic	Government secures and exports primary	Provides government revenues,			
Policy	commodities	patronage opportunities	Angola		
Illiberal Economic			Cuba (1959), Vietnam		
Policy;	Nationalize or collectivize large parts	Reduces economic or anti-colonial	(1975). None since		
Authoritarian Illiberal Economic	of the economy	grievances	1989.		
Policy;		Provides government revenues,			
Authoritarian	Seize property of losers	patronage opportunities	Sri Lanka		
	Implement a truth and reconciliation	Social reconciliation, addresses	Liboria		
	Implement a truth and reconciliation commission	demands for justice or punishment	Liberia		
Justice Post-Conflict	commission	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice		demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated	International Criminal		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice	commission	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society.	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict	commission Hold trials	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Tustice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political,	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society	International Crimina Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala		
Justice Post-Conflict Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Post-Conflict Post-Conflict Post-Conflict Post-Conflict Post-Conflict	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Authoritarian Authoritarian	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of habeas corpus; use of military courts for	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life Imprisons organizers of violence,	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka Indonesia, Russia		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Authoritarian Authoritarian	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Authoritarian Authoritarian	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of habeas corpus; use of military courts for civilians Mass killings; extra judicial killings;	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life Imprisons organizers of violence, deters future violence Kills organizers of violence, deters	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka Indonesia, Russia Myanmar		
Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Authoritarian Authoritarian	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of habeas corpus; use of military courts for civilians	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life Imprisons organizers of violence, deters future violence	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka Indonesia, Russia		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Authoritarian Authoritarian	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of habeas corpus; use of military courts for civilians Mass killings; extra judicial killings; assassinations Suspend constitution; rule using	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life Imprisons organizers of violence, deters future violence Kills organizers of violence, deters	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka Indonesia, Russia Myanmar		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Authoritarian Authoritarian	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of habeas corpus; use of military courts for civilians Mass killings; extra judicial killings; assassinations	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life Imprisons organizers of violence, deters future violence Kills organizers of violence, deters future violence	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka Indonesia, Russia Myanmar		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Authoritarian Authoritarian	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of habeas corpus; use of military courts for civilians Mass killings; extra judicial killings; assassinations Suspend constitution; rule using	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life Imprisons organizers of violence, deters future violence Kills organizers of violence, deters future violence Allows full use of coercion against	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka Indonesia, Russia Myanmar Iraq		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Authoritarian Authoritarian	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of habeas corpus; use of military courts for civilians Mass killings; extra judicial killings; assassinations Suspend constitution; rule using	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Figures expelled from post-conflict society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life Imprisons organizers of violence, deters future violence Kills organizers of violence, deters future violence Allows full use of coercion against	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka Indonesia, Russia Myanmar Iraq		
Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Post-Conflict Justice Authoritarian Authoritarian	commission Hold trials Provide amnesty Provide reparations Purge collaborators from political, administrative, and military life Lustration Exile key figures Govern with an autocratic regime Restrict civil liberties Restrict political rights Mass arrests or detentions; suspension of habeas corpus; use of military courts for civilians Mass killings; extra judicial killings; assassinations Suspend constitution; rule using emergency powers or under martial law	demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society, addresses demands for justice or punishment Demobilizes and reintegrates fighters into society. Addresses demands for justice or punishment Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Conflict-promoting actors isolated from society Coercion Inhibits the organization of political opposition Excludes political opposition from political life Imprisons organizers of violence, deters future violence Kills organizers of violence, deters future violence Allows full use of coercion against political opposition	International Criminal Tribunal for the forme Yugoslavia Algeria Guatemala Bosnia East Germany Ethiopia Indonesia Chad, Sri Lanka Indonesia, Russia Myanmar Iraq Myanmar		

Peacebuilding Approach	Specific Policy	Hypothesized Effect on Peace	Representative Citations or Cases		
	Form new ministries; reorganize	Increases governance, provides			
State Organization	ministries	patronage opportunities	Uganda, Afghanistan		
		Improves governance, helps mitigate			
	Improve or train the bureaucracy, reduce	pathologies of liberalization			
State Organization	corruption	process	Kosovo		
State Organization	Increase government payroll	Increases governance, provides patronage opportunities	Iraq?		
beace organization	Increase government payrorr	Improves governance, helps mitigate	iiuq.		
		pathologies of liberalization			
State Organization	Improve the judiciary, reduce corruption	process	Kosovo		
		to give constituents in conflict			
		region a legitimate, local			
		government; provide local patronage			
State Organization	Create new regional or local districts	opportunities	Uganda		
		Institutions help mitigate			
8++++ 0	Establish a market-regulatory framework prior to liberalization	pathologies of liberalization	D		
State Organization	prior to liberalization	process	Paris (2004)		
	Conduct a census; issue government	Improves governance, surveillance,			
State Organization	identity cards	and intelligence			
	างการการการการการการการการการการการการการก				
		Improves governance, surveillance of			
State Organization	Conduct a cadaster	economy, taxation			
Other Security		Improves security, raises costs of			
Sector	SSF: increase size of ground forces	rebellion, deters rebellion	Afghanistan		
Other Security	SSF: have enough security personnel	Provides internal security, deters	Vacaura		
Sector	deployed	rebellion, crime	Kosovo		
Other Security	SSF: establish units for COIN, CT, rural	Improves security, raises costs of			
Sector	pacification, SWAT missions	rebellion, deters rebellion	Afghanistan		
Other Security	SSF: equip security sector for internal	Improves security, raises costs of			
Sector	warfare, COIN, CT, etc.	rebellion, deters rebellion	Afghanistan		
Other Security	SSF: establish a presidential bodyguard,	Reduces feelings of vulnerability in			
Sector	or regime-protection force	the executive, and regime leaders	Uganda		
Other Security	SSF: secure international borders and				
Sector	SSF: secure international borders and border areas	Improves security, raises costs of rebellion, deters rebellion	Paul, Clarke, Grill, and Dunigan (2013)		
500001	bolder areas	repetition, accers repetition	and Bunigan (2015)		
Other Security		Improves security, raises costs of			
Sector	SSF: use paramilitaries or militias	rebellion, deters rebellion	Jones (2012)		
	Govern with the assistance of traditional				
Other	or charismatic forms of legitimacy	Improves legitimacy of government	Uganda		
0.1	Foreign power provides security guarantee	Provides assurance to parties,			
Other	to factions	reduces feelings of vulnerability	Walter (2002)		
Predetermined			Hartzell and Hoddie (2003); Mattes and		
Fredetermined Factors	Conclude a peace treaty, transition pact	Signals preferences	(2003); Mattes and Savun (2010)		
	timetade a peace creaty, transition pace	Decisive victories lead to more			
Predetermined		secure peace; negotiated settlements			
Factors	Conflict termination type	more difficult to implement	Walter (2002)		
			Collier and Hoeffler		
Predetermined		High development reduces risk of	(2000); Fearon and		
Factors	Development level	civil war	Laitin (2003)		
Predetermined			Geddes, Wright, and		
Factors	Regime transition	Ambiguous	Frantz (2013)		

# Appendix B

Post War Episode	Short Name	Episode Start	Episode End	War Recur.	Conflict Recu
Afghanistan (Mujahedeen; Civil War)	AFG1	April 1978	December 2001	June 2003	
Afghanistan (Taliban insurgency)	AFG2	June 2003	Ongoing		
Algeria (vs. AIS, GIA)	ALG1	December 1991	December 2003		
Algeria (vs. GSPC/AQIM, MUJAO)	ALG2	December 2003	Ongoing		
Angola I	ANG1	November 1975	December 1995	May 1998	
Angola II	ANG2	May 1998	April 2002		
Argentina	ARG1	August 1974	December 1977		
Azerbaijan	AZE1	December 1991	July 1994		
Bangladesh (Independence)	BNG1	March 1971	December 1971		
Bangladesh (Chittagong)	BNG2	February 1975	December 1991		
Bosnia (vs. Croats)	BOS1	January 1993	March 1994		
Bosnia (vs. Serbs)	BOS2	April 1992	November 1995		
Burundi	BUI1	October 1994	September 2006		March 2008
Cambodia I	CAM1	May 1967	April 1975	December 1978	
Cambodia II	CAM2	December 1978	October 1998		
Chad I	CHA1	July 1966	November 1972	February 1976	
Chad II	CHA2	February 1976	June 1982	December 1986	
Chad III	CHA3	December 1986	November 1987	March 1989	
Chad IV	CHA4	December 1988	December 1990	December 1991	
Chad V	CHA5	December 1991	December 1994	October 1997	
Chad VI	CHA6	October 1997	December 2003	December 2005	
Chad VII	CHA7	December 2005	April 2010		
Colombia	COL1	December 1964	Ongoing		
Congo	CON1	June 1997	December 1999		April 2002
Croatia I	CR01	July 1991	December 1991		
Croatia II	CR02	May 1995	November 1995		
DR Congo I	DRC1	October 1996	September 2001	November 2006	
DR Congo II	DRC2	November 2006	October 2008	June 2012	
DR Congo III	DRC3	June 2012	Ongoing		
El Salvador	SAL1	September 1979	December 1991		
Eritrean Independence	ERI1	March 1964	May 1991		
Ethiopia (OLF vs. Mengistu regime I)	ETH1	December 1980	December 1981	July 1983	
Ethiopia (WSLF vs. Mengistu regime)	ETH2	October 1976	December 1983		
Ethiopia (EPRDF vs. Mengistu regime)	ETH3	June 1976	June 1991		October 199
Ethiopia (OLF vs. Mengistu regime II)	ETH4	July 1983	June 1992		December 199
Ethiopia (OLF vs. EPRDF regime)	ETH5	December 1998	Ongoing		
Ethiopia (ONLF vs. EPRDF regime)	ETH6	December 1998	Ongoing		
Georgia (Abkhazia)	GRG1	August 1992	December 1993		
Guatemala	GUA1	December 1965	December 1995		
India (Maoist insurgency I)	IND1	December 1969	December 1971		

Post War Episode	Short Name	Episode Start	Episode End	War Recur.	Conflict Recur
India (Punjab insurgency)	IND2	December 1983	December 1993		
India (Assam insurgency)	IND3	December 1994	October 2010		
India (Kashmir insurgency)	IND4	December 1989	Ongoing		
India (Maoist insurgency II)	IND5	April 1996	Ongoing		
Indonesia (West Papua)	INS1	December 1976	December 1978		December 1981
Indonesia (East Timor)	INS2	December 1975	December 1989		December 1992
Indonesia (Aceh)	INS3	June 1999	October 2005		
Iran (vs. MEK)	IRN1	December 1979	December 1982		December 1986
Iran (vs. KDPI)	IRN2	December 1979	December 1988		July 1990
Iraq (vs. KDP)	IRQ1	December 1961	March 1970		
Iraq (vs. PUK)	IRQ2	July 1973	December 1992		March 1995
Iraq (vs. Shia, SCIRI)	IRQ3	December 1991	December 1996		
Iraq (US occupation and aftermath)	IRQ4	April 2004	Ongoing		
Israel-Palestine I	WBG1	December 1949	December 1996	November 2000	
Israel-Palestine II	WBG2	November 2000	December 2012	July 2014	
Kosovo War	KOS1	March 1998	June 1999		
Laos	LA01	December 1963	September 1973		
Lebanon I	LEB1	September 1975	October 1976		
Lebanon II	LEB2	September 1982	December 1986	March 1989	
Lebanon III	LEB3	March 1989	October 1990		
Liberia I	LBR1	December 1989	September 1990	October 1992	
Liberia II	LBR2	May 2000	November 2003		
Libya	LIB1	March 2011	November 2011		
Mali	MAL1	January 2012	Ongoing		
Mauritania	MAA1	December 1975	December 1978		
Morocco	MOR1	November 1975	November 1989		
Mozambique	MZM1	December 1977	October 1992		
Myanmar (Shan I)	MYA1	November 1959	December 1970		December 1972
Myanmar (vs. Communists)	MYA2	February 1948	December 1988		
Myanmar (Karen I)	MYA3	January 1949	November 1992		December 1994
Myanmar (Kachin I)	MYA4	February 1961	December 1992		
Myanmar (Shan II)	MYA5	July 1993	September 2002		December 2005
Myanmar (Karen II)	MYA6	March 2000	December 2011		April 2013
Myanmar (Kachin II)	MYA7	June 2011	November 2013		
Namibian Independence	NAM1	December 1966	August 1988		
Nepal	NEP1	August 1996	September 2006		
Nicaragua I	NIC1	October 1977	July 1979	April 1982	
Nicaragua II	NIC2	April 1982	April 1990		
Nigeria (Biafra)	NGA1	July 1967	January 1970		
Nigeria (vs. Boko Haram)	NGA2	March 2011	Ongoing		
Pakistan (Balochistan)	PAK1	December 1974	July 1977		
Pakistan (Islamist insurgencies)	PAK2	July 2007	Ongoing		
Peru	PER1	August 1982	December 1999		
Philippines (vs. MNLF)	PHI1	August 1970	December 1990	February 1993	
Philippines (vs. CPP I)	PHI2	September 1969	December 1995	June 1999	November 1997

Post War Episode	Short Name	Episode Start	Episode End	War Recur.	Conflict Recur.
Philippines (vs. MILF)	PHI3	January 1996	December 2005		January 2007
Philippines (vs. CPP II)	PHI4	June 1999	Ongoing		
Philippines (vs. ASG, BIFM, MNLF-NM)	PHI5	February 1993	Ongoing		
Russia (Chechnya I)	RUS1	November 1994	August 1996	July 1999	
Russia (Chechnya II)	RUS2	July 1999	October 2007		
Russia (North Caucuses)	RUS3	November 2007	Ongoing		
Rwanda I	RWA1	October 1990	July 1994	July 1996	
Rwanda II	RWA2	July 1996	March 2002		
Rwanda III	RWA3	February 2009	December 2012		
Sierra Leone	SIE1	April 1991	December 2001		
Somalia I	SOM1	March 1986	December 1996		May 2001
Somalia II	SOM2	October 2006	Ongoing		
South Sudan	SSD1	August 2011	Ongoing		
South Yemen	YPR1	January 1986	January 1986		
Sri Lanka (vs. JVP I)	SRI1	April 1971	June 1971		
Sri Lanka (vs. JVP II)	SRI2	February 1989	February 1990		
Sri Lanka (vs. LTTE I)	SRI3	September 1984	December 2001	December 2005	June 2003
Sri Lanka (vs. LTTE II)	SRI4	December 2005	July 2009		
Sudan (vs. SSLM)	SUD1	December 1963	January 1972		
Sudan (vs. SPLM/NDA)	SUD2	May 1983	December 2004		
Sudan (Darfur)	SUD3	April 2003	Ongoing		
Sudan (Southern Border)	SUD4	June 2011	Ongoing		
Syria I	SYR1	June 1979	February 1982		
Syria II	SYR2	October 2011	Ongoing		
Tajikistan	TAJ1	May 1992	November 1998		September 2000
Thailand	THI1	October 2003	Ongoing		
Turkey	TUR1	August 1984	February 2013		
Uganda (vs. LRA I)	UGA1	November 1986	December 1991	February 1994	
Uganda (vs. UPA)	UGA2	December 1987	December 1992		
Uganda (vs. LRA II)	UGA3	February 1994	December 1998	January 2000	
Uganda (vs. ADF)	UGA4	November 1996	November 2002		January 2007
Uganda (vs. LRA III)	UGA5	January 2000	August 2006		January 2008
United Kingdom	UKG1	August 1971	November 1991		
Yemen I	YAR1	October 1962	May 1970		
Yemen II	YAR2	March 1979	May 1982		
Yemen III	YEM1	April 1994	July 1994		
Yemen (vs. AQAP)	YEM2	December 2009	Ongoing		
Zimbabwe	ZIM1	April 1973	December 1979		

## Appendix C

The set of		Proportion	OU	TCOME = NOWAR		OUTCO	ME = NOCONFLIC	r
post-war		of cases	Significance	Consistency	Coverage	Significance	Consistency	Coverage
countries that Submit to a UN	Operationalization	in set	Level	score	score	Level	score	score
monitoring mission	Presence of UN monitoring mission	0.09		0.78	0.09		0.67	0.10
Submit to a UN peacekeeping mission	Presence of UN peacekeeping mission	0.04		0.50	0.03		0.50	0.03
Submit to a UN	Presence of UN							
complex peacebuilding mission	complex peacebuilding mission	0.14		0.86	0.16		0.79	0.19
Submit to any UN PKO	Presence of UN PKO	0.27		0.78	0.28		0.70	0.33
Submit to other 3d party monitoring mission	Presence of other 3d party monitoring mission	0.04		0.75	0.04		0.50	0.03
Submit to other 3d party peacekeeping mission	Presence of other 3d party peacekeeping mission	0.05		0.80	0.05		0.40	0.03
Submit to other 3d party complex peacebuilding	Presence of other 3d party complex peacebuilding mission	0.01		0.00	0.00		0.00	0.00
mission Submit to other 3rd party PKO of any kind	Presence of other 3rd party PKO	0.10		0.70	0.09		0.40	0.07
Submit to any third party PKO	Presence of any PKO	0.59		0.79	0.34		0.67	0.38
Adopt a new, interim, or amended constitution	New, interim, or amended constitution adopted	0.59		0.76	0.58	*	0.66	0.66
Govern with a democratic regime	Democratic regime type	0.23		0.87	0.26	**	0.78	0.31
Have 'free' civil liberties	Score 4 or better in source	0.27	*	0.89	0.32	*	0.74	0.34
Have 'free' political rights	Score 4 or better in source	0.26	*	0.88	0.30	***	0.85	0.38
Expand civil liberties	Improve score	0.24		0.71	0.22		0.63	0.26
Expand political rights	Improve score	0.26		0.81	0.28		0.54	0.24
Hold any election within 5 Years	As reported in source	0.79		0.79	0.82		0.60	0.81
Hold national elections within 5 years	As reported in source	0.75		0.80	0.78		0.59	0.76
Hold local election within 5 Years	As reported in source	0.52	*	0.84	0.57	*	0.67	0.59
Hold any election within 2.5 Years	As reported in source	0.69	*	0.84	0.75	*	0.65	0.76
Hold national elections within 2.5 years	As reported in source	0.61		0.82	0.64	**	0.67	0.69
Hold local election within 2.5 Years	As reported in source	0.39		0.85	0.43		0.62	0.41
Hold local elections first	As reported in source	0.16		0.81	0.17		0.69	0.19
Select legislators using any proportional representation	As reported in source	0.33		0.82	0.36		0.70	0.40
Govern with a post-war, political power-sharing agreement	As reported in source	0.34		0.76	0.34		0.65	0.38

The set of		Proportion	OU	TCOME = NOWAR		OUTCO	T.	
post-war countries that	Operationalization	of cases in set	Significance Level	Consistency score	Coverage score	Significance Level	Consistency score	Coverage score
Reserve seats	As reported in	0.21		0.81	0.22		0.52	0.19
for minorities Reserve seats	source As reported in							
for women	source	0.28		0.82	0.30		0.68	0.33
Are a								
decentralized political system	As reported in source	0.57	*	0.84	0.62	* * *	0.71	0.69
Are a federal	As reported in	0 00	**	0 00	0.04		0.70	0.04
system	source	0.20	~ ~	0.90	0.24		0.70	0.24
Have an upper house in legislature	As reported in source	0.35		0.77	0.36		0.57	0.34
Implement a	As reported in							
formal DDR	sources	0.42		0.79	0.43		0.60	0.43
process Implement	Decrease in active							
military force reduction	duty army > 10 percent	0.26		0.73	0.25		0.54	0.24
Integrate equal								
or a large number of	As reported in	0.22		0.73	0.21		0.59	0.22
rebels into military or	sources	0.22		0.75	0.21		0.35	0.22
police Permit factions								
to maintain armed forces in their	As reported in sources	0.28		0.82	0.30		0.50	0.24
territories								
Sign a World	As reported in	0.42		0.71	0.39		0.60	0.43
Bank SAP	sources As reported in							
Sign an IMF SAP	sources As reported in	0.51	***	0.66	0.43		0.52	0.45
Sign any SAP	sources	0.58	*	0.70	0.53		0.56	0.55
Receive								
official development	Average yearly ODA > 5 percent of GNI	0.44	* * *	0.61	0.36	* *	0.45	0.34
assistance								
Receive diaspora	Average yearly							
support;	remittances > 1 percent of GDP	0.39	**	0.87	0.45	* * *	0.74	0.50
remittances	percent or GDF							
Are high income or upper middle income	As reported in source	0.08		1.00	0.11		0.75	0.10
Grow their	Average annual							
economy	growth rate	0.34		0.76	0.34		0.65	0.38
	exceeds 10 percent Average annual							
Have high health expenditures <sup>32</sup>	expenditures exceed 4.5 percent	0.36		0.72	0.49		0.64	0.59
Host an ICRC	of GDP As reported in							
Host an ICRC mission	source	0.69		0.76	0.68		0.57	0.67
Produce	Major producer of gemstone diamonds							
diamonds	as reported in	0.16		0.69	0.14		0.56	0.16
	sources							
Produce natural	Average annual							
Produce natural gas	natural gas production exceeds	0.13		0.92	0.16		0.62	0.14
	100 metric tons							
	Average annual							
Produce oil	natural oil product. exceeds	0.33	* *	0.91	0.39		0.67	0.38
	1,000,000 metric							
Produce	tons							
diamonds,	Scored 1.0 on	0.39		0.85	0.43		0.64	0.43
natural gas, or	diamond, gas, or oil	0.33		0.03	0.43		0.04	0.43
oil Implement a								
Truth and	As reported in	0 15		0 70	0.14		0 70	0 10
Reconciliation	sources	0.15		0.73	0.14		0.73	0.19
Process	As reported in	0.26	**	0.92	0.32	* * *	0.81	0.36
Hold war trials								
Hold war trials Provide amnesty	sources As reported in			0.72	0.54		0.60	0.59

<sup>32</sup> Data since 1989 only.

The set of		Dronontion	OU	TCOME = NOWAR		OUTCO	ME = NOCONFLIC	т
post-war countries that	Operationalization	Proportion of cases in set	Significance Level	Consistency score	Coverage score	Significance Level	Consistency score	Coverage score
Provide	As reported in		пелет					
reparations	sources	0.14		0.93	0.17	* *	0.86	0.21
Purge the								
political,								
administrative,	As reported in	0.07		0.71	0.07		0.71	0.09
or military	sources							
class; Lustration								
Exile key	As reported in							
figures	sources	0.14		0.79	0.14		0.57	0.14
Implement any								
post-conflict	Scored 1.0 on truth, trials,							
justice	reparations,	0.47	*	0.85	0.53	* * *	0.72	0.59
mechanism aside	purges, or exile							
from amnesty Govern with an								
autocratic	Any autocratic regime type, as	0.69		0.74	0.66	*	0.50	0.59
regime	reported in source	0.05		0.74	0.00		0.50	0.55
Restrict civil								
liberties	Worsen score	0.17		0.76	0.17		0.53	0.16
Restrict								
political	Worsen score	0.16		0.75	0.16		0.63	0.17
rights								
Commit mass	> 100 Civilian							
killing	deaths in any one	0.16	* *	0.56	0.17	* * *	0.25	0.10
-	post-war year							
Commit mass	Score 4.0 or							
violence	greater on political terror	0.34		0.74	0.33		0.50	0.29
	scale							
	Score between 3.0							
Repress	(inclusive) and							
political opposition	4.0 on political	0.44		0.70	0.41		0.50	0.38
	terror scale							
Have better	Average annual CPI							
than terrible	score is 3.0 or	0.22		0.82	0.34	* *	0.73	0.41
corruption <sup>33</sup> Increase size	greater Increase in active							
of active duty	duty army > 10	0.21		0.76	0.21		0.71	0.26
army forces	percent	0.21		0.70	0.21		0.71	0.20
Have sufficient								
active duty	Above median	0.53		0.77	0.53		0.63	0.57
army forces	(5.53)							
Have ministry								
of interior	As reported in							
troops, forces,	Military Balance	0.42		0.76	0.60		0.55	0.59
or national police <sup>34</sup>	-							
Have a								
gendarmerie or								
other rural	As reported in	0.12		0.67	0.15		0.58	0.18
constabulary	Military Balance							
force <sup>35</sup>								
Have main	> 100 reported	0.28	**	0.89	0.47		0.64	0.46
battle tanks <sup>36</sup>	main battle tanks	0.20			····		U.UI	0.40
Have armored	> 100 reported	-		_	_		_	
personnel	armored personnel	0.37		0.84	0.58		0.57	0.54
carriers'	carriers							
Have helicopters <sup>38</sup>	> 10 reported helicopters	0.47	*	0.83	0.74	*	0.64	0.77
	> 10 reported							
Have armed helicopters <sup>39</sup>	> 10 reported armed helicopters	0.23		0.78	0.34		0.52	0.31
Have MI-24, -								
25, -35 "Hind"	> 10 reported Hind	0.16		0.81	0.25		0.69	0.28
helicopters40	helicopters	0.10		0.01	0.20		0.05	0.20
Have a								
presidential,	Re warrante 1 1							
presidential, republican, or	As reported in Military Balance	0.20		0.65	0.25		0.55	0.28
presidential,	As reported in Military Balance	0.20		0.65	0.25		0.55	0.28

33	Data	since	1989	only.
34	Data	since	1989	only.
35	Data	since	1989	only.
36	Data	since	1989	only.
37	Data	since	1989	only.
38	Data	since	1989	only.
39	Data	since	1989	only.
40	Data	since	1989	only.
41	Data	since	1989	only.

	OUTCOME = NOWAR			OUTCOME = NOCONFLICT			
Operationalization	Proportion of cases in set	Significance Level	Consistency score	Coverage score	Significance Level	Consistency score	Coverage score
As reported in Military Balance	0.19		0.74	0.26		0.47	0.23
As reported in Military Balance	0.28		0.75	0.40	**	0.43	0.31
As reported in Military Balance	0.49	*	0.84	0.77		0.61	0.77
	As reported in Military Balance As reported in Military Balance As reported in	Operationalization     in set       As reported in Military Balance     0.19       As reported in Military Balance     0.28       As reported in     0.49	Proportion of cases in set     Significance Level       As reported in Military Balance     0.19       As reported in Military Balance     0.28	Proportion of cases in set         Significance Level         Consistency score           As reported in Military Balance         0.19         0.74           As reported in Military Balance         0.28         0.75	Proportion of cases in setSignificance LevelConsistency scoreCoverage scoreAs reported in Military Balance0.190.740.26As reported in Military Balance0.280.750.40	Proportion of cases in setSignificance LevelConsistency scoreCoverage scoreSignificance LevelAs reported in Military Balance0.190.740.26As reported in Military Balance0.280.750.40As reported in Military Balance0.48*0.840.77	Proportion of cases in setSignificance LevelConsistency scoreCoverage scoreSignificance LevelConsistency scoreAs reported in Military Balance0.190.740.260.47As reported in Military Balance0.280.750.40**0.43

 <sup>&</sup>lt;sup>42</sup> Data since 1989 only.
 <sup>43</sup> Data since 1989 only.
 <sup>44</sup> Data since 1989 only.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- "NTC Statement on Membership." 2011. NTC statement on membership.
- Agence France Presse. 2011a. Libya's Kadhafi under siege as cities overrun. February 21.
- Agence France Presse. 2011b. Kadhafi loses control of east Libya, mass exodus. February 23.
- Agence France Presse. 2011c. Council set up to get Libya's Benghazi running again. February 25.
- Al Jazeera. 2013. Libyans renew pressure on militias to vacate. November 23.
- Almgren, Gunnar. 2005. The ecological context of interpersonal violence: From culture to collective efficacy. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence* 20 (2): 218-24.
- Amnesty International. 2010. 'Libya of Tomorrow": What Hopes for Human Rights? London, UK: Amnesty International Publications.
- Ban Ki-Moon (2008). Securing peace and development: The role of the United Nations in supporting security sector reform. New York, NY: United Nations.
- Barakat, Sultan and Alpaslan Özerdem. 2005. Impact of the reintegration of former KLA combatants on the post-war recovery of Kosovo. International Journal of Peace Studies 10 (1): 27-45.

Barnett, M. N. (2006). Building a republican peace: Stabilizing states after war. International Security, 30(4), 87-112.

- BBC News. 2014. Libya rebels return Ras Lanuf and Sidra oil terminals. July 2.
- Beck, Nathaniel. 2008. Time-Series--Cross-Section methods. Oxford Handbook of Political Methodology, pp. 475-93.
- Becker, Gary S. 1968. Crime and punishment: An economic approach. The Journal of Political Economy 76 (2): 169-217.
- Bigombe, Betty, Collier, Paul, & Sambanis, Nicolas. (2000). Policies for building post-conflict peace. Journal of African Economies, 9(3).
- Binningsbø, Helga M., Loyle, C. E., Gates, Scott, & Elster, John. (2012). Armed conflict and post-conflict justice, 1946-2006: A dataset. Journal of Peace Research, 49(5), 731-740.
- Blattman, Christopher, & Miguel, Edward. (2010). Civil war. Journal of Economic Literature, 48(1), 3-57.
- Bone, James. 2011. Rebel 'road map' to democracy calls for polls within moths. The Times (London), May 6.

Boutros-Ghali, B. (1992). An agenda for peace: Preventive diplomacy, peacemaking and peacekeeping. New York, NY: United Nations.

Brancati, D. (2006). Decentralization: Fueling the fire or dampening the flames of ethnic conflict and secessionism? *International Organization*, 60(3).

Brancati, D., & Snyder, J. L. (2011). Rushing to the polls: The causes of premature postconflict elections. Journal of Conflict Resolution, 55(3), 469-492.

Brancati, D., & Snyder, J. L. (2013). Time to kill: The impact of election timing on postconflict stability. *Journal of Conflict Resolution*, 57(5), 822-853.

Bratton, M., & van de Walle, N. (1997). Democratic experiments in Africa: Regime transitions in comparative perspective. New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.

Bryanski, Gleb. 2011. Putin likens U.N. Libya resolution to crusades. *Reuters*, March 21.

Buchanan, J. (2009). "Who will tell me what happened to my son?": Russia's implementation of European Court of Human Rights judgments on Chechnya. Washington, DC: Human Rights Watch.

Buhaug, H., Gates, S., & Lujala, P. (2009). Geography, rebel capability, and the duration of civil conflict. Journal of Conflict Resolution, 53(4), 544.

Butterworth, Robert Lyle. 1978. Do conflict managers matter? International Studies Quarterly 22 (2): 195-213.

Carames, A., Fisas, V., & Luz, D. (2006). Analysis of disarmament, demobilisation and reintegration (DDR) programmes existing in the world during 2005. Bellaterra: Escola de Cultura de Pau, Universitat Autònoma de Barcelona.

Carey, S. C., Mitchell, N. J., & Lowe, W. (2013). States, the security sector, and the monopoly of violence: A new database on pro-government militias. Journal of Peace Research, 50(2), 249-258.

Chenoweth, E., & Lewis, O. A. (2013). Unpacking nonviolent campaigns: Introducing the NAVCO 2.0 dataset. *Journal of Peace Research*, 50(3), 415-423.

Chivers, C. J. 2011. Problems With Logistics, Coordiation and Rivalries Hamper Libya's Rebels. *New York Times*, July 21.

Chivvis, Christopher S. 2013. Toppling Qaddafi: Libya and the Limits of Liberal Intervention. New York, NY: Cambridge University Press.

Chivvis, Christopher S. and Jeffrey Martini. 2014. Libya After Qaddafi: Lessons and Implications for the Future. Santa Monica, CA: RAND Corporation. Coghlan, Tom. 2011. Rebels struggling to flip the switch despite a detailed blueprint. *The Times (London)*, August 25.

Collapse in Kosovo. 2004. Europe Report.

Pristina/Belgrade/Brussels: International Crisis Group.

- Colletta, N. J., Kostner, M., & Wiederhofer, I. (1996). Case studies in war-to-peace transition: The demobilization and reintegration of ex-combatants in Ethiopia, Namibia, and Uganda. The International Bank for Reconstruction and Development / World Bank.
- Collier, P., & Hoeffler, A. (2000). Greed and grievance in civil war. Washington, DC: World Bank Development Research Group.
- Collier, P., & Hoeffler, A. (2004). Aid, policy and growth in post-conflict societies. *European Economic Review*, 48(5), 1125-1145.
- Collier, P., Hoeffler, A., & Rohner, D. (2009). Beyond greed and grievance: Feasibility and civil war. *Oxford Economic Papers*, 61, 1-27.
- Collier, Paul and Anke Hoeffler. 2004. Aid, policy and growth in post-conflict societies. *European Economic Review* 48 (5): 1125-1145.
- Collier, Paul, Anke Hoeffler, and Måns Söderbom. 2008. Post-Conflict risks. *Journal of Peace Research* 45 (4): 461-478.
- Consumption Poverty in the Republic of Kosovo in 2009. 2011. World Bank/Statistical Office of Kosovo.
- Cordesman, Anthony H. 2005. The North African Military Balance: Force Developments in the Maghreb. Center for Strategic and International Studies.
- Country Analysis Brief: Libya. 2014. Country Analysis Brief: Libya U.S. Energy Information Administration.
- Croissant Y, Millo G (2008). "Panel Data Econometrics in R: The plm Package." Journal of Statistical Software, 27(2). Updated Version Accessed April 2015.
- Cronqvist, L. (2011). Tosmana: Tool for small-n analysis version 1.3.2.0 [Computer Software]. Trier: University of Trier.
- de Soysa, I., & Fjelde, H. (2010). Is the hidden hand an iron fist? Capitalism and civil peace, 1970-2005. Journal of Peace Research, 47(3), 287-298.
- Diamond, L. J. (2005). Lessons from Iraq. Journal of Democracy, 16(1), 9-23.
- Diehl, Paul F, Jennifer Reifschneider, and Paul R Hensel. 1996. United Nations intervention and recurring conflict. International Organization 50 (4): 683-700.
- Divided We Stand: Libya's Enduring Conflicts. 2012. Middle East/North Africa Report. International Crisis Group.
- Dobbins, J., Jones, S. G., Crane, K., & DeGrasse, B. C. (2007). *The beginner's guide to nation-building*. Santa Monica, CA: RAND Corporation.

- Dobbins, J., Jones, S. G., Crane, K., Chivvis, C. S., Radin, A., Larrabee, F. S.,...Goldsmith, B. W. (2008). Europe's role in nation-building: From the Balkans to the Congo. Santa Monica, CA: RAND Corporation.
- Dobbins, J., Jones, S. G., Crane, K., Rathmell, A., Steele, B., Teltschick, R., & Timilsina, A. (2005). *The UN's role in nation-building: From the Congo to Iraq*. Santa Monica, CA: RAND Corporation.
- Dobbins, J., McGinn, J. G., Crane, K., Jones, S. G., Lal, R., Rathmell, A.,...Timilsina, A. (2003). America's role in nation-building: From Germany to Iraq. Santa Monica, CA: RAND Corporation.
- Dobbins, J., Miller, L. E., Pezard, S., Chivvis, C. S., Taylor, J. E., Crane, K.,...Mengistu, T. (2013). Overcoming obstacles to peace: Local factors in nation-building. Santa Monica, CA: RAND Corporation.
- Doherty, Megan. 2011. 'Now We Have Hope': Citizen Views on Libya's Political Transition National Democratic Institute.
- 2012. Building a New Libya: Citizen Views on Libya's Electoral and Political Processes National Democratic Institute.
- Doyle, M. W. (1983). Kant, liberal legacies, and foreign affairs. In M. E. Brown, S. M. Lynn-Jones, & S. E. Miller (Eds.), Debating the democratic peace (pp. 3-57). Cambridge, MA: The MIT Press.
- Doyle, Michael W and Nicolas Sambanis. 2006. Making War and Building Peace: United Nations Peace Operations. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
- Doyle, Michael W. and Nicholas Sambanis. 2000. International peacebuilding: A theoretical and quantitative analysis. American Political Science Review 94 (4): 779-801.
- Duşa, A., & Thiem, A. (2014). QCA: A package for qualitative comparative analysis. R package version 1.1-3 (Vol. 5) [Computer Software]. Retrieved from http://CRAN.Rproject.org/package=QCA
- Eljarh, Mohamed. 2013. On Top of Everything Else, Now Libya Has a Corruption Scandal to Worry About. *Foreign Policy*, October 22.
- Engel, Andrew. 2014. Libya's Growing Risk of Civil War Washington Institute for Near East Policy: PolicyWatch 2256.
- Facts on the Environment. 2009. Pristina: Statistical Office of Kosovo.
- Fahim, Kareem. 2011a. Qaddafi Forces Given Deadline to Surrender. New York Times, August 31.

Fajnzylber, Pablo, Daniel Lederman, and Norman Loayza. 2002. What causes violent crime? European Economic Review 46 (7): 1323-1357.

Fearon, J. D. (2005). Primary commodity exports and civil war. Journal of Conflict Resolution, 49(4), 483-507.

Fearon, J. D., & Laitin, D. D. (2003). Ethnicity, insurgency, and civil war. American Political Science Review, 97(1), 75-90.

Fearon, James D and David D Laitin. 2004. Neotrusteeship and the problem of weak states. *International Security* 28 (4).

Fearon, James D. 2004. Why do some civil wars last so much longer than others? Journal of Peace Research 41 (3): 275-301.

Finkel, S. E., Green, A., Pérez-Linán, A., Seligson, M., & Tate, C. N. (2008). Cross-National research on USAID' 's democracy and governance programs - codebook (phase II).

Fletcher, Martin. 2011. As cities fall to the insurgents, dictator readies for bloody last stand in Tripoli. The Times (London), February 25.

Fortna, V. P. (2008). Does peacekeeping work? Shaping belligerents' choices after civil war. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Fortna, Virginia Page. 2004a. Does peacekeeping keep peace? International intervention and the duration of peace after civil war. International Studies Quarterly 48.

— 2004b. Interstate peacekeeping: Causal mechanisms and empirical effects. World Politics 56:July 2004.

Galtung, F., & Tisné, M. (2009). A new approach to postwar reconstruction. *Journal of Democracy*, 20(4), 93-107.

Galula, David. 2006/1964. Counterinsurgency Warfare: Theory and Practice. Westport, CT: Praeger Security International.

Gartenstein-Ross, Daveed and Nathaniel Barr. 2015. Dignity and Dawn: Libya's Escalating Civil War. International Centre for Counter-Terrorism - The Hague.

Gerring, John. 2001. Social Science Methodology: A Criterial Framework. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press.

Gibney, Mark, Linda Cornett, Reed Wood, Peter Haschke, and Daniel Arnon. 2015. The Political Terror Scale 1976-2015. Date Retrieved, from the Political Terror Scale website: http://www.politicalterrorscale.org

Gilligan, M., & Stedman, S. J. (2003). Where do the peacekeepers go? International Studies Review, 5(4), 37-54. Retrieved from Google Scholar. Gilligan, Michael J and Ernest J Sergenti. 2008. Do UN interventions cause peace? Using matching to improve causal inference. *Quarterly Journal of Political Science* 3:89-122.

Glassmyer, K., & Sambanis, N. (2008). Rebel-Military integration and civil war termination. Journal of Peace Research, 45(3), 365-384.

Haggard, S., & Tiede, L. (2013). The rule of law in postconflict settings: The empirical record. *International Studies Quarterly*.

Harbom, L., Hogbladh, S., & Wallensteen, P. (2006). Armed conflict and peace agreements. Journal of Peace Research, 43(5), 617-631.

Hartzell, C. A., & Hoddie, M. (2007). Crafting peace: Powersharing institutions and the negotiated settlement of civil wars. Penn State Press.

Hartzell, C. A., Hoddie, M., & Bauer, M. (2010). Economic liberalization via IMF structural adjustment: Sowing the seeds of civil war? International Organization, 64(2).

Hartzell, Caroline and Matthew Hoddie. 2003. Institutionalizing peace: Power sharing and post-civil war conflict management. American Journal of Political Science 47 (2): 318-332.

Hauslohner, Abigail. 2013. Deadly clashes erupt in Libyan capital between militias, protesters. *Washington Post*, November 16.

Hegre, Håvard, Tanja Ellingsen, Scott Gates, and Nils Petter Gleditsch. 2001. Toward a democratic civil peace? Democracy, political change, and civil war, 1816-1992. American Political Science Review 95 (1): 33-48.

Heinemann-Grüder, Andreas and Igor Grebenschikov. 2006. Security governance by internationals: The case of Kosovo. *International Peacekeeping* 13 (1): 43-57.

Hider, James, Michael Evans, Deborah Haynes, and Tom Coghlan. 2011. Rebel victory now 'is the worst outcome'; Diplomats fear power vacuum if Gaddafi falls. The Times (London), August 17.

Hoddie, Matthew and Caroline Hartzell. 2005. Signals of reconciliation: Institution-Building and the resolution of civil war. International Studies Review 7:21-40.

Honaker, James and Gary King. 2010. What to do about missing values in time-series cross-section data. American Journal of Political Science 54 (2): 561-581.

Human Development Report: Kosovo 2004. 2004. United Nations Development Programme.

Human Rights Watch. 2006a. A Threat to Society? Arbitrary Detention of Women and Girls for 'Social Rehabilitation'. New York, NY: Human Rights Watch.

- Human Rights Watch. 2006b. Words to Deeds: The Urgent Need for Human Rights Reform. 2006. New York, NY: Human Rights Watch.
- Human Rights Watch. 2009. Truth and Justice Can't Wait: Human Rights Developments in Libya amid Institutional Obstacles. 2009. New York, NY: Human Rights Watch.

Humphreys, M., & Weinstein, J. M. (2007). Demobilization and reintegration. Journal of Conflict Resolution, 51(4), 531-567.

Huntington, S. P. (1968). *Political order and changing* societies. New Haven, CT: Yale University Press.

ISRT. 2011. Libya: 20 May - 30 June 2011 International Stabilization Response Team. U.K. Department for International Development.

- Jandura, David. 2012. Libya's electoral system. Ahwa Talk. http://ahwatalk.com/2012/07/04/libyas-electoral-system/.
- Jones, Seth G, Jeremy M Wilson, Andrew Rathmell, and K. Jack Riley. 2005. *Establishing Law and Order After Conflict*. Santa Monica, CA: RAND Corporation. Web.
- King, G., & Zeng, L. (2007). When can history be our guide? The pitfalls of counterfactual inference. International Studies Quarterly, 51.
- Kirkpatrick, David D. 2011. Rebels Arm Tripoli Guerrillas and Cut Resources to Capital. New York Times, June 25.
- 2011b. Rebels Pour Into Central Tripoli Square, Declaring Victory: Instead of Bloody Struggle, a Headlong Rush into a Cheering but Wary Capital. New York Times, August 22.

— 2012. Attack by Fringe Group Highlights the Problem of Libya's Miliitas. New York Times, September 15.

- Kirkpatrick, David D. and Ben Hubbard. 2013. For Islamists, Dire Lessons on Politics and Power. New York Times, July 5.
- Kosovo Internal Security Sector Review. 2006. Pristina, Kosovo: ISSR.
- Kosovo Poverty Assessment. 2001. II of II vols. Washington, D.C.: World Bank.
- Kosovo Poverty Assessment. 2007a. I of II vols. Pristina, Kosovo: World Bank/Statistical Office of Kosovo.
- Kosovo Poverty Assessment. 2007b. II of II vols. Pristina, Kosovo: World Bank/Statistical Office of Kosovo.
- Kubo, Keiichi. 2010. Why Kosovar Albanians took up arms against the Serbian regime: The genesis and expansion of the UÇK in Kosovo. Europe-Asia Studies 62 (7): 1135-1152.
- Kuperman, Alan J. 2013. Lessons from Libya: How Not to Intervene Belfer Center for Science and International Affairs, Harvard Kennedy School.
- Lacher, Wolfram. 2013. Fault Lines of the Revolution: Political Actors, Camps and Conflicts in the New Libya. SWP Research

Paper. Berlin, Germany: Stiftung Wissenschaft und Politik, German Institute for International and Security Affairs.

Lamloum, Imed. 2011. Libya rebel casualties mount in battle for Zliten. Agence France Presse, July 22.

Leonard, D. K., & Straus, S. (2003). Africa's stalled development: International causes and cures. Boulder, Colo.: Lynne Rienner Publishers.

Libyan Election Party List Results: Seats Per Party by District. 2012. Project on Middle East Democracy.

Lijphart, A. (2004). Constitutional design for divided societies. *Journal of Democracy*, 15(2), 96-109.

Lokshina, T. (2009). "What your children do will touch upon you": Punitive house-burning in Chechnya. Washington, DC: Human Rights Watch.

Longest, K., & Vaisey, S. (2008). Fuzzy: A program for performing qualitative comparative analyses (QCA) in Stata. Stata Journal, 8(1), 79-104.

Malcolm, Noel. 1998. Kosovo: A Short History. London: Macmillan.

Mansfield, E. D., & Snyder, J. (2002). Democratic transitions, institutional strength, and war. International Organization, 56(02), 297-337.

Martin, Ian. 2011. United Nations Post-conflict Deployment to Libya. United Nations.

Mattes, M., & Savun, B. (2010). Information, agreement design, and the durability of civil war settlements. American Journal of Political Science, 54(2), 511-524.

McFate, S. (2010). The link between DDR and SSR in conflictaffected countries. Washington, DC: United States Institute of Peace.

Measuring the Trust: Security and Public Safety Perceptions in Kosovo. 2008. Pristina, Kosovo: OSCE Mission in Kosovo.

Mertus, Julie A. 2009. Operation allied force: Handmaiden of independent Kosovo. *International Affairs* 85 (3): 461-476.

Michael, Maggie. 2011. Chants of 'Free, free Libya' heard in rebel-held city closest to capital. *Associated Press*, February 27.

Miguel, E., Satyanath, S., & Sergenti, E. J. (2004). Economic shocks and civil conflict: An instrumental variables approach. *Journal of Political Economy*, 112(4), 725-753.

Military Balance. 2009. International Institute for Strategic Studies.

Military Balance. 2011. International Institute for Strategic Studies.

Montalvo, J. G., & Reynal-Querol, M. (2005). Ethnic polarization, potential confict, and civil wars. American Economic Review, 95(3), 796-818.

- Muharremi, Robert, Lulzim Peci, Leon Malazogu, Verena Knaus, and Teuta Murati. 2003. Administration and Governance in Kosovo: Lessons Learned and Lessons to Be Learned. Pristina/Geneva: Centre for Applied Studies in International Negotiations (CASIN).
- Mullenbach, M. J. (2013). Third-Party peacekeeping in intrastate disputes, 1946-2012: A new data set. *Midsouth Political Science Review*, 14, 103-133.
- Neudorfer, N. S., & Theuerkauf, U. G. (2014). Buying war not peace: The influence of corruption on the risk of ethnic war. *Comparative Political Studies*.
- Olsen, T. D., Payne, L. A., & Reiter, A. G. (2010). Transitional justice in the world, 1970-2007: Insights from a new dataset. *Journal of Peace Research*, 47(6), 803-809.
- Oneal, John R. and Bruce Russett. 1999. The Kantian peace: The pacific benefits of democracy, interdependence, and international organizations, 1885-1992. World Politics 52 (1): 1-37.
- Pack, Jason, Karim Mezran, and Mohamed Eljarh. 2014. Libya's Faustian Bargains: Breaking the Appeasement Cycle Atlantic Council: Rafik Hariri Center for the Middle East.
- Paris, Roland. 2004. At War's End: Building Peace After Civil Conflict. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press.
- Peake, Gordon P. 2004. Policing the Peace: Police Reform Experiences in Kosovo, Southern Serbia and Macedonia. London: Saferworld.
- Police Education and Development. 2005. Pristina, Kosovo: OSCE Mission in Kosovo.
- POMED Backgrounder: Previewing Libya's Elections. 2012. POMED Backgrounder: Previewing Libya's Elections Project on Middle East Democracy.
- Population: By Gender, Ethnicity at Settlement Level. 2013. Pristina, Kosovo: Kosovo Agency of Statistics.
- Posner, D. N. (2004). Measuring ethnic fractionalization in Africa. American Journal of Political Science, 48(4), 849-863.
- Powell, J. M., & Thyne, C. L. (2011). Global instances of coups from 1950 to 2010: A new dataset. Journal of Peace Research, 48(2), 249-259.
- Ragin, C. C. (1987). The comparative method: Moving beyond qualitative and quantitative strategies. Berkeley, CA: University of California Press.

Ragin, C. C. (2006). Set relations in social research: Evaluating their consistency and coverage. Political Analysis, 14(3), 291-310.

Ragin, C. C. (2007). Qualitative comparative analysis using fuzzy sets (fsQCA). In C. C. Ragin & B. Rihoux (Eds.), Configurational comparative analysis. Sage Publications.

Ragin, C. C. (2008a). Fuzzy sets: Calibration versus measurement. In Oxford Handbook of Political Science: Oxford handbook of political methodology. New York, NY: Oxford University Press.

Ragin, C. C. (2008b). Redesigning social inquiry: Fuzzy sets and beyond. Chicago, IL: University of Chicago Press.

Ragin, C. C. (2008c). User's guide to Fuzzy-Set/Qualitative Comparative Analysis. Tuscon, AZ: University of Arizona.

Ragin, C. C., & Sonnet, J. (2004). Between complexity and parsimony: Limited diversity, counterfactual cases, and comparative analysis. Los Angeles, CA: University of California, Los Angeles.

Ragin, C., & Davey, S. (2014). *fs/QCA*, *version 2.5* [Computer Software]. Irvine, CA: University of California.

Raleigh, C., Linke, A., Hegre, H., & Karlsen, J. (2010). Introducing ACLED: An armed conflict location and event dataset. *Journal of Peace Research*, 47(5), 651-660.

Rees, Edward. 2004. Light Blue: Public Perceptions of Security and Police Performance in Kosovo. Pristina, Kosovo: UNDP Kosovo.

Reno, W. (1998). Warlord politics and African states. Boulder, CO: Lynne Rienner Publishers.

Reno, W. (2002). Uganda's politics of war and debt relief. Review of International Political Economy, 9(3), 415-435.

Report of the Secretary-General on the United Nations Support Mission in Libya. 2011. Report of the Secretary-General on the United Nations Support Mission in Libya United Nations Security Council: S/2011/727.

Report of the Secretary-General on the United Nations Support Mission in Libya. 2012. Report of the Secretary-General on the United Nations Support Mission in Libya United Nations Security Council: S/2012/129.

Repression Across Borders: Attacks and Threats Against Rwandan Opponents and Critics Abroad. (2014). Washington, DC: Human Rights Watch.

Ross, M. L. (2004). What do we know about natural resources and civil war? *Journal of Peace Research*, 41(3), 337-356.

Rueschemeyer, Dietrich. 2003. Can one or a few cases yield theoretical gains? In *Comparative Historical Analysis in the Social Sciences*. Ed. Dietrich Rueschemeyer and James Mahoney. Cambridge, U.K.: Cambridge University Press.

- Russett, B. (1994). Grasping the democratic peace: Principles for a post-Cold War world. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.
- Salehyan, I. (2007). Transnational rebels: Neighboring states as sanctuary for rebel groups. *World Politics*, 59, 217-42.
- Sampson, Robert J. 1986. Crime in cities: The effects of formal and informal social control. Crime and Justice 8:271-311.
- Schemm, Paul. 2011. Politicians in Libya's rebel stronghold
  Benghazi set up first leadership council. Associated Press,
  February 27.
- Schmitt, Eric. 2011. U.S. Gives Its Air Power Expansive Role in Libya. New York Times, March 29.
- Schulhofer-Wohl, J., & Sambanis, N. (2010). Disarmament, demobilization, and reintegration programs: An assessment. Sandöverken: Folke Bernadotte Academy.
- Security Sector Reform. (2009). Washington, DC: US Agency for International Development, US Department of Defense, US Department of State.
- Shennib, Gaith and Patrick Markey. 2013. More rival militias withdraw from Libyan capital. *Reuters*, November 21.
- Smith, J. G., Holt, V. K., & Durch, W. J. (2007). Enhancing United Nations capacity to support post-conflict policing and rule of law. Washington, DC: Henry L. Stimson Center.
- Sri Lanka's Authoritarian Turn: The Need for International Action. (2013). Brussels, Belgium: International Crisis Group.
- Sri Lanka's North I: The Denial of Minority Rights. (2012). Brussels, Belgium: International Crisis Group.
- Sri Lanka's North II: Rebuilding Under the Military. (2012). Brussels, Belgium: International Crisis Group.
- Sri Lanka's Potemkin Peace: Democracy Under Fire. (2013). Brussels, Belgium: International Crisis Group.
- Stringer, David. 2011. After mistakes in Iraq, international diplomats draw up detailed plans for post-Gadhafi Libya. Associated Press, June 24.
- Sundberg, R., & Melander, E. (2013). Introducing the UCDP georeferenced event dataset. Journal of Peace Research, 50(4), 523-532.
- The Comprehensive Peace Agreement Between the Government of the Republic of the Sudan and the Sudan People's Liberation Movement/Sudan People's Liberation Army. (2005). United Nations Mission in Sudan. Retrieved from http://peacemaker.un.org/node/1369
- Thiem, A., & Duşa, A. (2013a). QCA: A package for qualitative comparative analysis. *The R Journal*, 5(1).
- Thiem, A., & Duşa, A. (2013b). *Qualitative comparative analysis* with R: A user's guide. Springer.

Vandewalle, Dirk. 2012. A History of Modern Libya. Cambridge University Press.

Wallensteen, P., & Heldt, B. (2006). Peacekeeping operations: Global patterns of intervention and success, 1948-2004 (Second ed.). Folke Bernadotte Academy.

Walter, B. F. (1997). The critical barrier to civil war settlement. *International Organization*, 51(3), 335-364.

Walter, B. F. (1999). Designing transitions from civil war: Demobilization, democratization, and commitments to peace. International Security, 24(1), 127-155.

Walter, B. F. (2004). Does conflict beget conflict? Explaining recurring civil war. Journal of Peace Research, 41(3), 371-388.

Wehrey, Frederic. 2012. Libya's milita menace: The challenge after the elections. *Foreign Affairs*.

Weller, Marc. 1999. The Rambouillet conference on Kosovo. International Affairs 75 (2): 211-251.

Wilkenfeld, Jonathan and Michael Brecher. 1984. International crises, 1945-1975: The UN dimension. *International Studies Quarterly* 27:45-67.

Wilson, James Q and George L Kelling. 1982. Broken Windows. Atlantic Monthly 249 (3): 29-38.

World Development Report 2011: Conflict, Security, and Development. (2011). Washington, DC: The International Bank for Reconstruction and Development / The World Bank.

Worth, Robert F. 2011. Qaddafi's Never-Neverland. New York Times, Magazine, September 25.